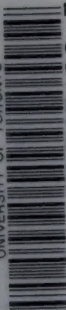


UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01547128 7

PB

1223

B7













~~baCelt~~  
~~B8745~~



385218  
3.10.40



PB

1223

B7



*Printed and Bound in Ireland at the Press of the Publishers.*



## PREFACE.

---

**T**HE Grammar of Spoken Irish presents many difficulties owing to the forms peculiar to different places, but as the literary usage embraces the dialects current in different localities, save a few archaic survivals, the literary usage has been adopted as the standard of this grammar.

Modern Irish may be said to date from the end of the 16th, or the beginning of the 17th century. At the commencement of the modern period many forms are found which belong to an earlier period, and many forms which have since grown obsolete, side by side with those by which they have since been replaced. We have deemed it advisable not to introduce into this grammar any obsolete grammatical forms, how prominent soever they may be in early modern literature. However, as students preparing for public examinations are frequently required to read the works of early modern authors, we have added in the present edition an appendix containing the verb-system of early modern Irish. Such early modern grammatical forms as survive only within a small area are not given in the large type; on the other hand, those grammatical forms generally found in literature, and which are still in use in any one of the three Irish-speaking Provinces, are given in the large print in preference to those more generally used by Irish speakers, but which are not found in literary works. It is hoped that this method may help to popularise Irish literature, and to reconcile in some degree the slight discrepancies which exist between the spoken and the literary usages.

In the present Grammar the letters *l*, *n*, and *p* are reckoned among the aspirable consonants, and *r* is omitted

from the eclipsable ones. The declension of verbal nouns is transferred from the third declension to the chapter on the verbs. A collection of heteroclite nouns is inserted. The usual declension of the personal pronouns is not employed, and the terms Conjunctive and Disjunctive pronouns are adopted. The naming of the four principal parts of an Irish verb, the treatment of the Autonomous form of conjugation, the rejection of compound prepositions, infinitive mood, and present participle form a few of the features of this grammar. Among the appendices will be found lists of words belonging to the various declensions, of verbs of both conjugation, and of irregular verbal nouns.

Many of the rules have been taken from the "O'Growney Series" and from the "Gaelic Journal." The grammars of Neilson, O'Donovan, Bourke, Craig, and of many other authors, have been consulted. The chapter on the classification of the uses of the prepositions is based on Dr. Atkinson's edition of Keating's *Trí Úior-ghairte an Úair*. Some of the sentences which illustrate the rules have been culled, with the author's permission, from the *Mion-éaint* of the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P.

In the present edition the enunciation of the rule *Caol le caol 7 leathan le leathan* has been modified so as to bring it more into harmony with the spoken language. The sections on the Relative pronouns, Demonstrative pronouns, Adverbs, and Conjunctions have been greatly enlarged and improved. A large collection of Idiomatic expressions and an exhaustive Index have been also added.

The Christian Brothers acknowledge with pleasure their indebtedness to Mr. John McNeill, B.A., and Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for their generous and invaluable aid in the production of this grammar. To Mr. R. J. O'Mulrenin, M.A., Mr. J. H. Lloyd, to Mr. Shortall, and to many other friends their best thanks are due, and gratefully tendered.

# CONTENTS.



	Page
The Letters ... ..	1
Sounds of the Vowels ... ..	2
The Diphthongs ... ..	2
The Triphthongs ... ..	3
Consonants, Division of the ... ..	4
"    Combination of the ... ..	5
Accent ... ..	6
"    Words distinguished by ... ..	7
Obscure Sounds of the Vowels ... ..	7
Aspiration, Explanation of ... ..	9
"    How marked ... ..	10
"    Rules for ... ..	11
Eclipsis ... ..	13
"    Rules for ... ..	15
Insertion of n ... ..	16
"        τ ... ..	17
"        h ... ..	18
Attenuation and Broadening ... ..	18
Caol le caol 7 leatán le leatán ... ..	19
Syncope, Explanation of ... ..	20
"    Examples of ... ..	21
The Article ... ..	23
"    Initial changes produced by ... ..	24
Gender, Rules for ... ..	26
Cases, Number of ... ..	28
"    Rules for formation of the ... ..	28

	Page
First Declension ... ..	30
"    Examples of vowel-changes ...	33
"    Irregular Genitive Singular ...	34
"    Irregular Nominative Plural ...	34
Second Declension ... ..	36
"    Examples of vowel-changes ...	37
"    Irregular Genitive Singular ...	39
"    Irregular Nominative Plural ...	39
Third Declension ... ..	41
"    Irregular Nominative Plural ...	44
Fourth Declension ... ..	45
"    Irregular Nominative Plural ...	46
Fifth Declension ... ..	47
Heteroclite Nouns ... ..	51
Irregular Nouns ... ..	52
The Adjective ... ..	56
"    First Declension ... ..	56
"    Second Declension ... ..	59
"    Third Declension ... ..	60
"    Fourth Declension ... ..	60
"    Aspiration of ... ..	61
"    Eclipsis of ... ..	62
"    Comparison of ... ..	63
"    Irregular Comparison... ..	68
Numeral Adjectives ... ..	69
"    "    Notes on ... ..	71
Personal Numerals ... ..	73
Possessive Adjectives ... ..	74
Demonstrative " ... ..	78
Indefinite " ... ..	79
Distributive " ... ..	82
Interrogative " ... ..	82
Intensifying Particles ... ..	66
Emphatic " ... ..	75



				Page.
Translation of "Some"	...	...	...	80
"    "Any"	...	...	...	81
<b>The Pronoun</b>				
Personal	...	...	...	83
Reflexive	...	...	...	84
Conjunctive and Disjunctive	...	...	...	85
Neuter Pronoun <i>εαὐ</i>	...	...	...	86
Prepositional	...	...	...	87
Relative	...	...	...	91
Demonstrative	...	...	...	93
Indefinite	...	...	...	94
Distributive	...	...	...	95
Interrogative	...	...	...	96
Reciprocal	...	...	...	97
<b>The Verb</b>				
Conjugations, Number of	...	...	...	98
"    Three forms of	...	...	...	99
"    Autonomous form of	...	...	...	100
Moods, Number of	...	...	...	102
Tenses, Number of	...	...	...	103
"    Various forms of the	...	...	...	104
Principal Parts of a Verb	...	...	...	106
"    Examples of	...	...	...	107
<b>First Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	108
"    Notes on Moods and Tenses of	...	...	...	112
Rule for Aspiration of <i>τ</i> of the Past Participle	...	...	...	116
Participle of Necessity	...	...	...	116
Derivative Participles	...	...	...	117
Declension of Verbal Nouns	...	...	...	118
<b>Second Conjugation</b>	...	...	...	118
Verbs in <i>ιῆ</i> and <i>υῆ</i>	...	...	...	119
Syncopated Verbs	...	...	...	120
<b>Rules for formation of Verbal Noun</b>	...	...	...	125
Irregular Verbs	...	...	...	127

	Page.
Irregular Verbs, Absolute and Dependent forms of ...	138
τάιμ ... ..	127
ιρ ... ..	133
δειμ ... ..	136
ταδαίμ ... ..	137
αδαίμ ... ..	140
ζαδ ... ..	142
φαζ ... ..	142
Deun ... ..	145
φεε ... ..	147
Clouf or Cluin ... ..	150
ταμ ... ..	150
τέιζ (τέιό) ... ..	152
ιέ ... ..	154
ριζιμ ... ..	155
<b>Defective Verbs</b>	
αι, ουαι, φευσαι ... ..	158
έαιλα, ο'φόβαιμ, φευδαίμ ... ..	167
<b>Adverbs</b> ... ..	167
Interrogative Words ... ..	160
"Up and Down," &c. ... ..	160
"This side, that side," &c. ... ..	162
"Over" ... ..	162
North, South, East, West ... ..	163
<b>Compound or Phrase Adverbs</b> ... ..	164
Days of the Week ... ..	167
"Head-foremost" ... ..	167
"However" ... ..	168
The Adverb "The" ... ..	168
<b>Prepositions</b> ... ..	168
<b>Conjunctions</b> ... ..	169
Use of ná and ná zo ... ..	170
Uses of μαμ ... ..	170
<b>Interjections</b> ... ..	171

	Page
Word-Building	
Prefixes	173
Affixes	176
Diminutives	178
„ in ín	179
„ in án	179
„ in ós	180
Derivative Nouns	181
Compound Nouns	182
Derivative Adjectives	186
Verbs derived from Nouns	190
„ „ Adjectives	191
Syntax of the Article	192
Article used in Irish but not in English	193
Syntax of the Noun	196
Apposition	197
Collective Nouns	197
Personal Numerals	198
Personal Nouns	199
Syntax of the Adjective	201
Adjective used Attributively	202
„ Predicatively	204
Numeral Adjectives	205
Dual Number	209
Possessive Adjectives	211
Syntax of the Pronoun	213
Relative Pronoun	214
Translation of the Genitive case of the English	
Relative	216
Syntax of the Verb	218
Uses of the Subjunctive Mood	219
Relative form of the Verb	221
Verbal Noun and its Functions	224
How to translate the English Infinitive	226
Definition of a Definite Noun	235

	Page
When to use the Verb IS .....	236
Position of Words with IS .....	240
Translation of the English Secondary Tenses .....	241
Prepositions after Verbs .....	243
Translation of the word " Not " .....	246
How to answer a question. Yes—No .....	246
Syntax of the Preposition .....	249
Translation of the Preposition " For " .....	256
"       "       "       " " Of " .....	260
Uses of the Preposition .....	262
Specimens of Parsing .....	284
Idioms .....	289
Idiomatic Phrases .....	305
The Autonomous form of the Irish Verb .....	315
<b>Appendices</b>	
i. List of Nouns belonging to First Declension ....	325
ii. List of Feminine Nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to Second Declen- sion .....	327
iii. List of Nouns belonging to Third Declension ....	329
iv. List of Nouns belonging to Fifth Declension ....	333
v. List of Irregular Verbal Nouns .....	334
vi. List of Verbs of First Conjugation .....	336
vii. List of Syncopated Verbs .....	338
viii. Termination of the Regular Verbs in present- day usage .....	339
ix. Verb-System of Early Modern Irish .....	340
<b>Index</b> .....	343



## **PART I.—ORTHOGRAPHY.**

---

### **CHAPTER I.**

#### **The Letters.**

1. The Irish alphabet contains eighteen letters, five of which are vowels, the remaining thirteen are consonants.

The vowels are *á, e, í, o, u*; and the consonants are *b, c, d, f, g, h, l, m, n, p, r, s, t*.

2. The vowels are divided into two classes.

(1) The **broad** vowels : *á, o, u*.

(2) The **slender** vowels : *e, í*.

The vowels may be either long or short. The long vowels are marked by means of an acute accent (') placed over the vowel, as *móir* (big) pronounced like the English word *more*; a short vowel has no accent, as *mot* (praise), pronounced like *mul* in the English word *mulberry*. Carefully distinguish between the terms "broad vowel" and "long vowel." The broad vowels (*á, o, u*) are not always long vowels, neither are the slender vowels (*e, í*) always short.

In writing Irish we must be careful to mark the accents on long vowels. See words distinguished by accent, **par. 14.**

### 3. Sounds of the Vowels.

The Irish vowel	is sounded like	in the words
á long	au	naught as in bávo (baudh), boat
a short	o	not „ glar (gloss), green
é long	æ	Gaelic „ cne (kīr-æ), clay
e short	e	let „ te (t'ye), hot
í	ee	feel „ máitín (mawil-eeen), little bag
i	i	hit „ fir (fir), men
ó	ō	note „ mór (mōr), big, large
o	ō, ũ	dōne or mŭch „ doras (dhur-us), a door
ú	oo	tool „ glún (gloon), a knee
u	u	bull or put „ ursu (ursu), a door-jamb

A short vowel at the end of an Irish word *is always pronounced.*

### The Digraphs.

4. The following list gives the sounds of the digraphs in Modern Irish. The first five are always long and require no accent. The others are sometimes long and sometimes short, hence the accent ought not to be omitted.\*

---

\* Since but few words, and these well-known, have eo short it is not usual to write the accent on eo long.

ia	is pronounced like ee-a as	ḡia (dyee-a), God.
ua	„	oo-a „ fuar (foo-ar), cold.
eu or éa	„	ae „ feur (faer), grass.
ae	„	ae „ laete (lae-hö), days.
ao	„	ae „ dhaor (dhaer), dear.
eó	„	yó „ ceol (k-yöl), music.
iú	„	ew „ fiú (few), worthy.
ái	„	au+ĩ „ cáin (kau-ĩn), a tax.
éi	„	ae+ĩ „ léim (lyae-ĩm), a leap.
ói	„	ō+ĩ „ móin (mō-in), a bog.
úi	„	oo+ĩ „ rúit (soo-ĩl), an eye.
eá	„	aa „ cairleán (kosh-laen*), a castle.]
fo	„	ee „ fíor (feer), true.
ai	}	a „ tair (thaish), damp.
ea		„ fear (far), a man.
ei	„	e „ eite (el-ě), other.
oi	„	ũ+i „ coit (thũ-il), a will.
io	}	i „ fíor (fiss), knowledge.
ui		„ uirge (ish-ge), water.
eo	„	ũ „ veoc (d'yukh), a drink.
ái (= aíóe)	„	ee „ coaí (kō-thee), coats.

### The Trigraphs.

5. There are six trigraphs in Irish. They are pronounced as follows:—

aoi	=	ee	raoi (see)=a wise man.
eoí	=	ō+ĩ	oíeoitín (d'rō-il-eeen)=a wren.

---

\* Also pronounced kosh-laun.

eΔi	=	aa+i	caip̃eΔin(kosh-lain)=castles
iaɪ*	=	eea+i	liΔiŋ(lee-ih)=a physician.
uaɪ†	=	oo+i	fuΔip̃(foo-ir)=found.
ui	=	ew+i	ciuin(kew-in)=calm.

### The Consonants.

6. The consonants are usually divided into two classes.

(1) The liquids—l, m, n, r.

(2) The mutes—b, c, d, f, g, p, q, t.

The letter h is not given, for h is not usually recognised as an Irish letter. It can be used only as a sign of aspiration, or at the beginning of a word, to separate two vowel sounds.

Some grammarians divide the consonants into labials, dentals, palatals, gutturals, sibilants, &c., according to the organs employed in producing the sound.

7. Every Irish consonant has two natural ‡ sounds, according as it is *broad* or *slender*.

An Irish consonant is broad whenever it immediately precedes or follows a broad vowel (a, o, u). An Irish consonant is slender whenever it immediately precedes or follows a slender vowel (e, i).

8. The Irish consonants, when broad, have a much

\* Pronounced like ille in the French word fille.

† It cannot be properly represented by any English sound. It is somewhat like *oue* in the French word ouest.

‡ Other sounds will be treated of under the heading "Aspiration."



thicker sound than in English; e. g. *ṽ* broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *thy*, i. e. *d+h*; *ṽ* broad has nearly the sound of *th* in *threw*, &c. When slender the Irish consonants (except *ṽ*) have somewhat the same sound as in English; but when they are followed by a slender vowel, they are pronounced somewhat like the corresponding English consonant followed immediately by a *y*, e. g. *ceot* (music) is pronounced *k' yōl*; *beo* (alive)=*b'yō*.

It must not, however, be understood that there is a “*y* sound” in the Irish consonant. The peculiar sound of the Irish consonants when followed by a slender vowel is fairly well represented by the corresponding English consonant+an English “*y* sound.” In some parts of the country this “*y* sound” is not heard. The *y* is *only suggestive*, and is never heard as a distinct sound.

### Combination of the Consonants.

9. There are certain Irish consonants which, when they come together in the same word, do not coalesce, so that when they are uttered a very short obscure vowel sound is heard between them.

This generally occurs in the case of two liquids or a liquid and a mute. Thus *batṽ* (dumb) is pronounced *boll-ūv*; *teanṽ* (a child) is *lyan-ūv*; *ṽorēa* (dark) is *dhur-ūehū*; *mapṽaṽ* (a market) is *mor-ūgu*.

The following combinations do not coalesce: *cn*, *lṽ*, *lṽ*, *lm*, *ṽb*, *ṽb*, *ṽṽ*, *ṽm*, *lṽm*, *nṽ*, *nṽm*, *ṽm*, *nṽ*, *ṽc*.

10. In some combinations, *one of the consonants is silent.*

ɔl is pronounced like ʌ

ɔn                    „                    nn

nɔ                    „                    nn

ln                    „                    ll

Thus, coɔlɑɔ (sleep) is pronounced kullū.

ceɔɔnɑ (same)                    „                    kaenū.

ʒɔɔnɔɑ (ugly)                    „                    graun-ū.

ɑɔlne (beauty)                    „                    aul-yě.

Notice the difference between nʒ and ʒn.

long (a ship) is pronounced lūng.

ʒnō (work)                    „                    gūn-ō.

11. Only three of the Irish consonants, viz. the liquids ʌ, n, ɾ, may be doubled. This doubling can take place only at the end or the middle of words, but never at the beginning. The double liquids have quite distinct sounds from the single, except in Munster, where, in some positions, double liquids influence vowels. This doubling at the end of a word does not denote shortness of the preceding vowel, as in English: in fact, it is quite the opposite; e. g. ea in ɾeaɾɾ (better) is longer than ea in ɾeaɾ (a man).

In Irish there is no double consonant like the English *x*, which = *ks*.

#### Accent.

12. The only accent sign used in writing Irish is the acute accent placed over the long vowels, and over

the long sounds of those diphthongs, which may be sometimes short. This sign is not intended to mark the syllable on which the stress of the voice falls.

13. In simple words of two syllables the tonic accent is usually upon the first syllable, as *Águr* (óg-us), *and*; *Úna* (oón-a), *Una*: but in derived words of two or more syllables the accented syllable varies in the different provinces.

In Munster the accent falls on the termination or second syllable; in Connaught it falls on the first syllable, or root; in Ulster the accent falls on the first syllable, as in Connaught, but the termination is unduly shortened. For instance, the word *carán*, a path, is pronounced *kos-aún* in Munster, *kós-aur* in Connaught, and *kós-án* in Ulster.

### The Obscure Vowel Sounds.

Whenever a vowel has neither a tonic nor a written accent, it has so transient and indistinct a pronunciation that it is difficult to distinguish one broad or one slender vowel from another; hence in ancient writings we find vowels substituted for each other indiscriminately: *e.g.*, the word *rlánuigte*, *saved*, is frequently spelled *rlánaigte*, *rlánoigte*, *rlánuigti*.

### 14. Words distinguished by their accent.

Áit, a place.

Áit, funny, peculiar (what one likes or wishes).

Ar, our; slaughter.

Ar, on; says.

bār, death.	bār (or bor), palm of the hand.
cār, a case.	car, turn.
céao (ceuo), a hundred.	ceao, leave, permission.
cōīn, right.	coīn, a crime.
cōīrte, a coach.	coīrte, a jury.
oó, two.	oo, to.
fán, a wandering.	fan, wait, stay.
féar (feup), grass.	fear, a man.
fór, yet.	for, a prop.
i, she, her.	i, in.
léar, clear, perceptible.	lear, the sea.
lón, food, provisions.	ton, a blackbird.
máta, a bag.	mata, an eyebrow.
méar (meup), a finger.	mear, quick, active.
mīn, fine.	min, meal.
nā, than; not ( <i>imperative</i> ).	na, the plural article.
rór, a rose.	por, flax-seed.
rāt, a heel.	rat, filth, dirt.
réan (reun), happy.	rean, old.
rīn, stretch.	rin, that.
rólar, comfort.	rotar, light.
rūl, ( <i>gen. plural of rūl</i> )	rul, before ( <i>with verbs</i> ).
eye.	
te, a person.	te, hot.

## CHAPTER II.

## Aspiration.

15. The word "aspiration" comes from the Latin verb "aspirare," to breathe; hence, when we say in Irish that a consonant is aspirated, we mean that the breath is not completely stopped in the formation of the consonant, but rather that the consonant sound is continuous.

Take, for example, the consonant **b**. To form this consonant sound the lips are pressed closely together for an instant, and the breath is forced out on separating the lips. Now, if we wish to get the sound of **b** aspirated (or **ḃ**), we must breathe the whole time whilst trying to form the sound of **b**; *i.e.* we must not close the lips entirely, and the resulting sound is like the English consonant **v**. Hence we say that the sound of **ḃ** (in some positions) is **v**.

The Irish letter **c** corresponds very much to the English **k**, and the breathed sound of **k** corresponds to the sound of **c̃** (when broad). To sound the English **k**, we press the centre of the tongue against the palate, and cut off the breath completely for an instant. In pronouncing **c̃** (when broad), all we have to do is to try to pronounce the letter **k** without *pressing* the tongue against the palate. The word **lóc**, a lake, is pronounced somewhat like *luk*; but the tongue is not to touch the palate to form the **k**. The sound of **c̃** aspirated when slender (especially when initial) is very well represented by the sound of "h" in "humane."

The Irish **g** (**ḡ**) has always the hard sound of **g** in the English word "go." In pronouncing this word we press the back of the tongue against the back of the palate. Now, to pronounce **ḡ** (and also **ḡ**) when broad, we must breathe in forming the sound of **g**, *i.e.* we must keep the tongue almost flat in the mouth.

The various sounds of the aspirated consonants are not given, as they are dealt with very fully in the second part of the "O'Growney Series." It may be well to remark, however, that the sound of **p̃** is like the sound of the Irish **p̃**, not the English **f**. The Irish **p̃** is sounded without the aid of the teeth.



16. Aspiration is usually marked by placing a dot over the consonant aspirated—thus, *ḃ*, *ċ*, *ȯ*. However, it is sometimes marked by an *h* after the consonant to be aspirated. This is the method usually adopted when Irish is written or printed in English characters.

17. In writing Irish only nine of the consonants, viz., *b*, *c*, *o*, *f*, *s*, *m*, *p*, *r*, and *t*, are aspirated; but in the spoken language all the consonants are aspirated.

### The Aspiration of *t*, *n*, *l*.

18. The aspiration of the three letters *t*, *n*, *l*, is not marked by any sign in writing, as is the aspiration of the other consonants (*ḃ* or *bḣ*); but yet they are aspirated in the spoken language. An example will best illustrate this point. The student has already learned that the word *leabhar*, a book, is pronounced *lyou-ar*. *mo*, my, aspirates an ordinary consonant, as *mo ḃó*, my cow; but it also aspirates *t*, *n*, *l*, for *mo leabhar*, my book, is pronounced *mū low-ar* (*i.e.* the sound of *y* after *l* disappears).

*a leabhar*, his book, is pronounced *a low-ar*.

*a leabhar*, her book,           *„*       *a lyou-ar*.

*a leabhar*, their book,       *„*       *a lyow-ar*.

*a neart*, his strength,       *„*       *a narth*.

*a neart*, her strength,       *„*       *a nyarth*.

    &c., &c.

19. When *t* broad begins a word it has a much thicker sound than in English. In sounding the English *l* the point of the tongue touches the palate just above the teeth; but to get the thick sound of the Irish *t* we must press the tongue firmly against the upper teeth (or we may protrude it between the teeth). Now, when such an *t* is aspirated it loses this thick sound, and is pronounced just as the English *l*.

20. It is not easy to show by an example the aspirated sound of *l*; however, it is aspirated in the spoken language, and a slightly softer sound is produced.

## Rules for Aspirations.

21. We give here only the principal rules. Others will be given as occasion will require.

(a). The **possessive adjectives** *mo*, *my*; *ῑο*, *thy*; and *α*, *his*, aspirate the first consonant of the following word, as *mo ῑό*, *my cow*; *ῑο ῑάταιρ*, *thy mother*; *α ἑσπᾶν*, *his horse*.

(b) The **article aspirates** a noun in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, and also in the genitive masculine singular unless the noun begins with *ο*, *τ*, or *ρ*; *αν ῑεαν*, *the woman*; *τά αν ῑεοῖτ ζυγῑτ*, *the meat is salt*; *μας αν ῑῑρ*, *(the) son of the man*.

(c) In **compound words** the initial consonant of the second word is aspirated, except when the second word begins with *ο* or *τ*, and the first ends in one of the letters *ο*, *η*, *τ*, *ι*, *ρ*. These five letters will be easily remembered, as they are the consonants of the word "*dental*s"; *ρεαν-ῑάταιρ*, *a grandmother*; *κάτ-ῑάῑρ*, *a helmet*; *τεῑτ-ῑῑγγῑν*, *a halfpenny*; but *ρεαν-οῖνε*, *an old person*; *ρεαν-τεᾶς*, *an old house*.

(d) The **interjection α**, the sign of the vocative case, causes aspiration in nouns of both genders and both numbers: *α ῑῑρ*, *O man*; *α ῑῑά*, *O women*; *α Σευμαῑρ*, *O James*.

(e) An **adjective is aspirated** when it agrees with a feminine noun in the nominative or accusative sin-

gular, or with a masculine noun in the genitive singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders; also in the nominative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant: as bó bán, a white cow; mac an fíú móir, (the) son of the big man; ó'n mnáoi máir, from the good woman; trí capaill móra, three big horses.

(f) When a noun is immediately followed by an indefinite\* noun in the genitive case, singular or plural, the initial of the noun in the genitive is usually subject to precisely the same rules as if it were the initial of an adjective: e. g. uó éirce, a hen-egg (lit. an egg of a hen); uíbe éirce, of a hen-egg; cloch míne, a stone of meal; mín éirce, oaten meal. The letters *o* and *t* are not aspirated after *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r*; and *r* is often excepted, as the change in sound is so great.

(g) The initial of a verb is aspirated—(1) in the imperfect, the simple past, and the conditional, active voice; (2) after the particles *ní*, not; *má*, if; *mar*, as; and *ru*, before; (3) after the simple relative particle expressed or understood: *bí ré*, he was; *o fear* *rí* she stood; *ní fuitim*, I am not; *ní beiré ré*, he will not be; *an té buairear* or *an té a buairear*, he (or the person) who strikes; *o buairinn*, I would strike.

---

\*i.e. One not preceded by the definite article, possessive adj., &c.  
See par. 585.

(h) The initial of the word following *bá* or *buó* (the past tense and conditional of the verb *ir*) is usually aspirated.\*

*bá máit liom*, I liked or I would like.

*b' fhearr leis*, he preferred or would prefer.

(i) The simple prepositions (except *ag*, *ar*, *le*, *san*, *i*, and *go*) aspirate the initials of the nouns immediately following them: *fa cloic*, under a stone; *tug ré an leabhar do Seumas*, he gave the book to James

## CHAPTER III.

### Eclipsis.

22. Eclipsis is the term used to denote the suppression of the sounds of certain Irish consonants by prefixing others produced by the same organ of speech.

There is usually a great similarity between the eclipsing letter and the letter eclipsed: thus, *p* is eclipsed by *b*; *t* is eclipsed by *d*, &c. If the student pronounce the letters *p* and *b*, *t* and *d*, he will immediately notice the similarity above referred to. Thus *b* and *d* are like *p* and *t*, except that they are pronounced with greater stress of the breath, or, more correctly, with greater vibration of the vocal chords.

\* Except in N. Connaught and Ulster, where this rule applies only to *b*, *p*, *m*, and sometimes *f*.

23. Seven\* of the consonants can be eclipsed, viz. **b, c, v, f, s, p, t**; the others cannot. Each consonant has its own eclipsing letter, and it can be eclipsed by no other. The eclipsing letter is written immediately before the eclipsed letter, and is sometimes, though not usually in recent times, separated from it by a hyphen, as **m-bárv** or **mbárv** (pronounced *maurdh*).

Formerly eclipsis was sometimes shown by doubling the eclipsed letter: thus, **Δ ττάρv**, their bull. Whenever a letter is eclipsed both should be retained in writing, although only one of them (the eclipsing one) is sounded.

24. It is much better not to consider the letter **r** as an eclipsable letter at all. **τ** replaces it in certain positions, but in none of those positions (dative singular excepted) in which the other letters are eclipsed. In fact, **r** is often replaced by **τ** when the previous word ends in **n**, as **an τρύit**, the eye; **don τρύit**, one heel; **pean τ-Síle**, old Sheelah; **burdean τρύuag**, a crowd, &c. Some, however, maintain that **r** is really eclipsed in these cases, because its sound is suppressed, and that of another consonant substituted; but as the substitution of **τ** follows the rules for aspiration rather than those for eclipsis, we prefer to class **r** with the non-eclipsable letters, **l, m, n, p, r**.

---

\*Eight is the number given in other grammars. They include the letter **r**.



25.

b is eclipsed by m.

c	„	ṣ.
ṭ	„	n.
f	„	b.
ṣ	„	n.
p	„	b.
t	„	ṭ.

Δ mbápo (their poet)	is pronounced a	maurd.
Δ ṣcapall (their horse)	„	a göpál.
Δp nṭán (our poem)	„	aur naun.
i bṣunt (in blood)	„	ă vwil.
Δ nṣiotta (their servant)	„	ang illū.
i bṣém (in pain)	„	a baen.
Δ ṭṭalam (their land)	„	a dhöl-ŭv.

Although n is used as the eclipsing letter of ṣ, the sound of n is not heard, but the simple consonant sound nṣ; therefore it would be more correct to say that ṣ is eclipsed by nṣ.

### Rules for Eclipsis.

**26. (a)** The possessive adjectives plural—Δp, our; ṭur, your; and Δ, their—eclipse the initial consonant of the next word, as Δp ṭṭiṣeapna, our Lord; ṭur ṣcapall, your horse; Δ mbao, their boat.

**(b)** The article eclipses the initial consonant of the noun in the genitive plural (both genders): lámā na ṭ-ṣeap, (the) hands of the men.

**(c)** A simple preposition followed by the article

and a noun in the singular causes eclipsis\*: *cá ré an an gcapall*, he is on the horse; *cáinig ré leir ar bpeap*, he came with the man.

(d) The numeral adjectives *reacht*, *ocht*, *naoi*, and *deic* (7, 8, 9, and 10), and their compounds, as 27, 28, 29, &c., cause eclipsis: *reacht mba*, seven cows; *ocht gcaoirig*, eight sheep; *reacht b-pir ríceao*, twenty-seven men.

(e) The initial consonant of a verb is eclipsed after the particles *cá*, not; *an*, whether; *cá*, where; *naé*, whether . . . not or that . . . not; *go*, that; *muna*, unless; *óá*, if; and after the relative particle *a* when it is preceded by a preposition, or when it means "all that" or "what." The relative preceded by a preposition does not eclipse if the verb be past tense, except in the case of a very few verbs, which will be given later on: *an tuigeanntá tú*, do you understand? *naé bfuil ré tinn*, isn't he sick? *cá bfuil ré*, where is it? *dubhairt ré go dtiocfaó ré*, he said that he would come; *an fear as a bfuil an leabap*,† the man who has the book.

### The Insertion of n.

27. (a) When a word begins with a vowel, the letter n is usually prefixed in all those cases in which a con-

---

\* In many places they prefer to aspirate in this case.

† In colloquial Irish this sentence would be, *an fear a b-fuil an leabap aige*, or *an fear go b-fuil an leabap aige*.

sonant would be eclipsed : *e.g.*,  $\delta\rho$   $n$ - $\delta\rho\acute{\alpha}n$   $\iota\alpha\epsilon\tau\epsilon\alpha\acute{m}\alpha\iota\iota$ , our daily bread ;  $\epsilon\upsilon\alpha\iota\omicron$   $\omicron\iota\rho\acute{\iota}n$   $\xi\omicron$   $\tau\iota\rho$   $n\alpha$   $n$ - $\omicron\varsigma$ , Oisín went to “the land of the young.”

The  $n$  is sometimes omitted when the previous word ends in  $n$  : as  $\delta\rho$   $\alpha n$   $\alpha\omicron n\alpha\epsilon$ , or  $\delta\rho$   $\alpha n$   $n$ - $\alpha\omicron n\alpha\epsilon$ , at the fair.

(*b*) **Prepositions** (except  $\omicron\omicron$  and  $\omicron\epsilon$ ) **ending in a vowel** prefix  $n$  to the possessive adjectives  $\alpha$ , his, her, or their; and  $\delta\rho$ , our;  $\iota\epsilon$   $n$ - $\alpha$   $\acute{m}\alpha\tau\alpha\rho$ , with his mother;  $\omicron$   $n$ - $\delta\rho$   $\omicron\tau\iota\rho$ , from our country.

### The Insertion of $\tau$ .

28. (*a*) The article prefixes  $\tau$  to a masculine noun beginning with a vowel in the nominative and accusative singular : as  $\alpha n$   $\tau$ - $\alpha\tau\alpha\rho$ , the father.

(*b*) If a noun begins with  $\rho$  followed by a vowel, or by  $\iota$ ,  $n$ , or  $\rho$ , the  $\rho$  is replaced by  $\tau$  after the article in the nom. and acc. feminine sing. and the genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative singular of both genders, as  $\alpha n$   $\tau\rho\acute{\iota}\iota$ , the eye;  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\epsilon$   $\alpha n$   $\tau\rho\alpha\varsigma\alpha\rho\tau$ , (the) house of the priest, *i.e.*; the priest's house ;  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\rho\iota\alpha\omicron$   $\alpha\varsigma$   $\tau\epsilon\alpha\epsilon\tau$   $\omicron'n$   $\tau\rho\epsilon\iota\varsigma$ , they are coming from the hunt.

(*c*) This replacing of  $\rho$  by  $\tau$  occurs after the words  $\alpha\omicron n$ , one ;  $\rho\epsilon\alpha n$ , old ; and other words ending in  $n$ , as  $\alpha\omicron n$   $\tau\rho\epsilon\alpha\varsigma$   $\alpha\acute{m}\alpha\iota n$ , one hunt.

### The Insertion of *n*

29. The following is a pretty general rule for the insertion of *n* before vowels:—

“Particles which neither aspirate nor eclipse, and which end in a vowel, prefix *n* to words beginning with a vowel. Such is the case with the following:—*te*, with; *Δ*, her; *σο*, to; *οαρα*, second; *ρε*, six; *τρι*, three; *να*, the (in the nom., acc., and dative plural, also in the gen. singular feminine); *σο* before adverbs; the ordinal adjectives ending in *μαθ*, &c.”  
—*Gaelic Journal*.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### Attenuation and Broadening.

30. *Attenuation* is the process of making a broad consonant slender. This is usually done by placing an *i* immediately before the broad consonant, or an *e* after it. Thus if we want to make the *p* of *μόp* (big), slender, we place an *i* before the *p*; thus *μόip*. If we wish to make the *p* of *բαθ* (the termination of the 1st person singular future) slender, we write *բειαθ*, &c.

31. *Broadening* is the process of making a slender consonant broad. This is often done by placing a *u* immediately before the slender consonant, or an *Δ* after it; thus the verbal noun of derived verbs ending in *ις* is formed by adding *Δθ*: before adding the *Δθ* the *ς* must be made broad; this is done by inserting

í; mínuġ, explain; mínuġaò, explanation. If we want to make the *p* of *píò* (the termination of 3rd singular future) broad, we must write *páíò*. *buaipíò* ré, he will strike; *meaippáíò* ré, he will deceive.

Whenever a slender consonant is preceded by an *i* which forms part of a diphthong or a triphthong, the consonant is usually made broad by dropping the *i*. Thus to broaden the *t* in *buaít*, or the *n* in *ġoin*, we drop the *i* and the we get *buaí* and *ġon*. The verbal nouns of *buaít* and *ġoin* are *buaíaò* and *ġonaò*.

---

## CHAPTER V.

*Caol le caol ġur leatán le leatán;*

or,

Slender with slender and broad with broad.

**32.** When a single consonant, or two consonants which easily blend together, come between two vowels, both the vowels must be slender or both must be broad.

This is a general rule of Irish phonetics. It has already been stated that a consonant is broad when beside a broad vowel, and slender when beside a slender vowel; and also that the sounds of the consonants vary according as they are broad or slender: hence if we try to pronounce a word like *peapín*, the *p*, being beside the slender vowel *í*, should get its slender sound; but being also beside the broad vowel *a*, the *p* should be broad. But a consonant cannot be slender and broad at the same time; hence, such spelling as *peapín*, *máíín*, and *éaínín*, does not represent the correct sounds of the words, and,



therefore, the device adopted in writing Irish is to have both the vowels slender or both broad; *e.g.*, *ṛṛín*, *máilín*, *éinín*.

This law of phonetics is not a mere *spelling* rule. If it were, such spelling as *ṛeáṛaoin*, *málaoin*, *éanaoin*, would be correct. But no such spelling is used, because it does not represent the sounds of the words. The *ear* and not the *eye* must be the guide in the observance of the rule "*caol le caol ⁊ leathan le leathan*."

Two consonants may come together, one naturally broad and the other naturally slender. When this happens, Irish speakers, as a general rule, give the consonants their *natural* sounds, *i.e.*, they keep the broad consonant broad, and the slender one slender. For instance, the *m* of *com* is naturally broad, and the *l* of *lín* is naturally slender. In the word *comlín* (*fulfil*), the first syllable is always pronounced broad, although the word is usually written *comlín*. This is an instance of the abuse of the rule *caol le caol*. There are many words in which a single consonant may have a slender vowel at one side, and a broad vowel at the other; *e.g.*, *aréin* (*last night*), *aníor* (*up*), *aríam* (*ever*), *arír* (*again*), etc.

Although the rule *caol le caol* had been much abused in modern spelling, in deference to modern usage we have retained the ordinary spelling of the words.

## CHAPTER VI.

### Syncope.

**33.** Whenever, in a word of two or more syllables an unaccented vowel or digraph occurs in the last syllable between a liquid (*l*, *m*, *n*, *ṛ*) and any other consonant, or between two liquids, the unaccented vowel or digraph is elided whenever the word is lengthened by a grammatical inflection beginning with a vowel. This elision of one or more unaccented

vowels from the body of an Irish word is called *syncope*; and when the vowels have been elided the word is said to be *syncopated*.

**34.** The only difficulty in syncope is that it often involves slight changes in the other vowels of the syncopated word, in accordance with the rule *caoi te caol*.

**35.** The following examples will fully exemplify the method of syncopating words.

(a) *Nouns.*

The genitive singular of—

maoin (morning)	is maíone	not maíone
obair (work)	„ oibre	„ obaire
carraig (a rock)	„ cairrge	„ cairrige
pinginn } (a penny)	„ pingne	„ pinginne
piġinn }	„ piġne	„ piġinne
cabair (help)	„ cabra	„ cabara
catair (a city)	„ catraċ	„ cataraċ
larair (a flame)	„ larrac	„ lararaċ
olann (wool)	„ olna	„ olanna
buidéan (a company)	„ buíone	„ buíoire
bpuigéan (a palace)	„ bpuighe	„ bpuigine

(b) *Adjectives.*

The genitive singular feminine of—

բարծիք (rich)	is բարծիք	not բարծիք
բաւեամաւ (princely)	„ բաւեամաւ	„ բաւեամաւ
ձւոյնն (beautiful)	„ ձւոյն	„ ձւոյնն
ձօւծոյնն (pleasant)	„ ձօւծոյն	„ ձօւծոյնն
ւարձաւ (noble)	„ ւարձ	„ ւարձաւ

(c) *Verbs.*

Root.	Pres. Indicative.		
ԿՕՎԱԼ	ԿՕՎԱԼԻՄ, I sleep,	not	ԿՕՎԱԼԻՄ.
բԻՍԾԱԼ	բԻՍԾԱԼԻՄ, I walk,	„	բԻՍԾԱԼԻՄ.
ԻՆՈՒԲ	ԻՆՈՒԲԻՄ, I tell,	„	ԻՆՈՒԲԻՄ.
ԱԾԱԲ	ԱԾԱԲԻՄ, I say,	„	ԱԾԱԲԻՄ.
ԼԱԾԱԲ	ԼԱԾԱԲԻՄ, I speak,	„	ԼԱԾԱԲԻՄ.

The same contraction takes place in these and like verbs in all the finite tenses except the future and conditional (*old* forms). See par. 298.

A thorough knowledge of when and how Syncope takes place will obviate many difficulties.

## PART II.—ETYMOLOGY.

36. There are nine parts of speech in Irish corresponding exactly to those in English.

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Article.

37. In Irish there is only one article, *an*, which corresponds to the English definite article, "the."

There is no indefinite article, so that *capall* means either "horse" or "a horse."

38. In all cases of the singular number the article has the form *an*, except in the genitive feminine, when it becomes *na*.

In all the cases of the plural it is *na*.

39. The article *an* had formerly an initial *r*. This *r* reappears after the following prepositions, *i*, *in*, or *ann*, *in*; *go*, *to*; *le*, *with*; *tríd*, *through*. Although this *r* really belongs to the article, still it is usually written as part of the preposition; as *inr an leabhar*, *in the book*; *leir an bpeap*, *with the man*.

### INITIAL CHANGES PRODUCED BY THE ARTICLE.

#### Singular.

40. (1) If a noun begins with an aspirable consonant (except *b*, *c*, and *r*),\* it is aspirated by the article

---

\* The letters *b*, *c*, and *r* are aspirable in the singular, but not usually by the article

in the nominative and accusative feminine and in the genitive masculine, as *an bó*, the cow; *an bean*, the woman; *mac an fí*, (the) son of the man; *ceann an capall*, the horse's head (or the head of the horse).

(b) If a noun begins with *r* followed by a vowel, or by *l*, *n*, *p*, the *r* is replaced by *τ*, in the nominative and accusative feminine and genitive masculine, and sometimes in the dative of both genders: *an τράτ*, the heel; *an τρύτ*, the eye; *teach an τράδair*, the house of the priest; *mac an τράoir*, the son of the artizan; *do'n τράδair*, to the priest; *ar an τρέib*, on the mountain.

Strictly speaking, it is only in the dat. fem. that the *r* is replaced by *τ*, but custom permits it in the masculine.

(c) If a noun begins with a vowel, the article prefixes *τ* to the nominative and accusative masculine, and *n* to the genitive feminine, as *an τ-athair*, the father; *an τ-uirge*, the water; *an τ-eun*, the bird; *an τ-uán*, the lamb; *báir na n-uíbe*, the top of the egg; *ruáct na n-aimpíre*, the coldness of the weather.

(d) When the noun begins with an eclipsable consonant (except *o* and *τ*), the article generally eclipses when it is preceded by a preposition, as *ar an gcnoc*, on the hill; *ó'n bpeap*, from the man. After the prepositions\* *do* and *de* aspiration takes place, not

---

\* For the effects of *gan* and the article, see Syntax, par. 606 (b).



eclipsis, as *tug ré an t-airgead do'n fear*, he gave the money to the man; *curo de'n fear*, some of the grass.

(e) No change is produced by the article in the singular if the noun begins with *o*, *n*, *t*, *l*, *r* (followed by a mute), or *p*. In *Munster* *o* and *t* are often eclipsed in the dative.

### Plural.

(f) If a noun begins with an eclipsable consonant the article eclipses it in the genitive plural, as *a bean na mbeirí* mbó, O woman of (the) three cows; *Stiaib na mbeirí*, "the mountain of the women."

(g) If the noun begins with a vowel the article prefixes *n* to the genitive plural and *n* to the nom., the acc., and dative plural, as *luac na n-ub*, the price of the eggs; *na n-airí*, the asses; *ó na n-airí* reo, from these places.

(h) The letter *p* is never replaced by *t* in the plural number under the influence of the article.

## CHAPTER II.

### The Noun.

#### I. GENDER.

41. There are only two genders in Irish, the masculine and the feminine.

The gender of most Irish nouns may be learned by the application of a few general rules.

## MASCULINE NOUNS.

**42.** (a) Names of males are masculine: as fear, a man; flait, a prince; aṭair, a father; coiteac, a cock.

(b) The names of occupations, offices, &c., peculiar to men, are masculine: as ollam, a doctor; file, a poet; bárd, a bard; breiteam, a judge; raigibúir, a soldier.

(c) Personal agents ending in óir, aipe, uirde (or aird, oird), or ac are masculine: as rgeuluirde, a story-teller; bárdóir, a boatman.

(d) Diminutives ending in án, and all abstract nouns ending in ar or ear, are masculine—*e.g.*:

árhoán, a hillock.

maítear, goodness.

(e) The diminutives ending in in are usually said to be of the same gender as the noun from which they are derived. Notwithstanding this rule they seem to be all masculine. Caitín, a girl, is masculine,\* i. e. it suffers the same initial changes as a masculine noun, *but the pronoun referring to it is feminine*. She is a fine girl, 1r breáḡ an caitín í (not é).

(f) Many nouns which end in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a broad vowel are masculine: as ball, a limb; tuac, a price; crann, a tree, &c.

*Exceptions*:—(1) All words of two or more syllables ending in ac or ós.

---

\* Do not confound sex with gender. Gender is decided by grammatical usage only.

(2) A large number of nouns ending in a broad consonant are feminine. A very full list of commonly used feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant will be found in Appendix II.

### FEMININE NOUNS.

43. (a) Names of females and designations of females are feminine: bean, a woman; cearc, a hen; macair, a mother; ingean, a daughter.

(b) The names of countries and rivers are feminine: as Éire, Ireland; an Liffe, the Liffey; an Ueapba, the Barrow.

(c) Words of two or more syllables ending in áct or in ós are feminine: as fuireós, a lark; uirreós, a briar; mitreáct, sweetness; teannáct, new-milk.

(d) All abstract nouns formed from the genitive singular feminine of adjectives are feminine: as áiríoe, height—from áro, high; áitne, beauty—from áluinn, beautiful; uáille, blindness—from uáil, blind.

(e) Nouns ending in a consonant or two consonants preceded by a slender vowel, are feminine: as tír, country; onóir, honour; uair, an hour; rúit, an eye.

*Exceptions:*—(1) Personal nouns ending in óir. (2) Diminutives in ín. (3) Names of males, as átar, a father; buacáil, a boy. (4) Also the following nouns:—buair, a victory; uirum, the back; áinn,\* a name; greim, a piece; geir, a fright, a start; and roctóir, dictionary, vocabulary.

---

\* Áinn is feminine in S. Munster.

## II. CASE.

**44.** In Irish there are five cases—the Nominative, Accusative, Genitive, Dative, and Vocative.

The Nominative case in Irish corresponds to the English nominative when the subject of a verb.

The Accusative corresponds to the English objective case when governed by a transitive verb. The accusative case of every noun in modern Irish has the same form as the nominative, and suffers the same initial changes as regards aspiration and eclipsis.

The Genitive case corresponds to the English possessive case. English nouns in the possessive case or in the objective case, preceded by the preposition “of,” are usually translated into Irish by the genitive case.

The Dative case is the case governed by prepositions.

The Vocative corresponds to the English nominative of address. It is always used in addressing a person or persons. It is preceded by the sign  $\Delta$ , although “O” may not appear before the English word; but this  $\Delta$  is not usually pronounced before a vowel or  $\dot{p}$ .

## RULES FOR THE FORMATION OF THE CASES.

**N.B.**—These rules apply to all the declensions.

**45.** The Nominative case singular is always the simple form of the noun.

**46.** The **Dative case singular** is the same as the nominative singular, except (1) in the 2nd declension, when the noun ends in a broad consonant; (2) in most of the nouns of the 5th declension.

**47.** The **Vocative case singular** is always the same as the nominative singular, except in the 1st declension, in which it is like the genitive singular.

**48.** Whenever the nominative plural is formed by the addition of τε, τα, αλλα, άδα, ι or ιοε, &c., it is called a **strong nominative plural**. Strong plurals are usually found with nouns whose nominative singular ends in a liquid.

Those ending in **ι** or **η** generally take **τα** or **τε**.

„	m or η	„	αλλα.
„	η	„	άδα.

### The Genitive Plural.

**49.** (1) The genitive plural in the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd declensions is like the nominative singular, except strong plurals, and a few nouns which drop the ι of the nominative singular, as **ρūt**, an eye, gen. pl. **ρūt**.

(2) In the 4th declension, and in the case of nearly all strong plurals, the genitive plural is like the **nominative plural**.

(3) In the 5th declension the genitive plural is like the genitive singular.



## 50. The Dative Plural.

(1) When the nominative plural ends in *a* or a consonant, the dative plural ends in *aiŭ*.

(2) When the nominative plural ends in *e*, the dative plural is formed by changing the *e* into *ŭ*.

(3) When the nominative plural ends in *i*, the dative plural is formed by adding *ŭ*.

The termination of the dative plural is not always used in the spoken language.

## Vocative Plural.

51. (1) When the dative plural ends in *aiŭ*, the vocative plural is formed by dropping the *ŭ* of the dative.

(2) In all other cases it is like the nominative plural.

## III. The Declensions.

52. The number of declensions is not quite settled: it is very much a matter of convenience. Five is the number usually reckoned.

The declensions are known by the inflection of the genitive singular.

### THE FIRST DECLENSION.

53. All the nouns of the first declension are masculine, and end in a broad consonant.

All masculine nouns ending in a broad consonant are not of the first declension.

54. The genitive singular is formed by attenuating the nominative. In most nouns of the 1st declension this is done by simply placing an *i* after the last broad vowel of the nominative.

## Example.

53.                    *μαορ*, a steward.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαορ</i>	<i>μαοιρ</i>
Gen.	<i>μαοιρ</i>	<i>μαορ</i>
Dat.	<i>μαορ</i>	<i>μαοραιβ</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαοιρ</i>	<i>α μαορα</i>

56. In words of more than one syllable, if the nominative ends in *α* or *εα*, the genitive singular is formed by changing *α* or *εα* into *αις* or *ις* respectively. With a few exceptions, the nominative plural of these nouns is like the genitive singular. The other cases are quite regular.

In monosyllables *ε* is not changed into *ς*; as *βρυα*, a brink, gen. *βρυαι*.

N.B.—In all the declensions in words of more than one syllable *α* or *εα*, when attenuated, become *αις* and *ις*; and *αις* and *ις* when made broad become *α* or *εα*. See dat. pl. of *μαρκα* and *κοιτα*.

## Examples.

57.                    *μαρκα*, a horseman.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>μαρκα</i>	<i>μαρκαις</i>
Gen.	<i>μαρκαις</i>	<i>μαρκα</i>
Dat.	<i>μαρκα</i>	<i>μαρκαα</i>
Voc.	<i>α μαρκα</i>	<i>α μαρκαα</i>

N.B.—The majority of nouns in *α* belonging to this declension are declined like *μαρκα*.

## 58. uatāc, a load, burden.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	uatāc	uatāige
Gen.	uatāig	uatāc
Dat.	uatāc	uatāigib
Voc.	ā uatāig	ā uatāige

mutāc, a summit; eutāc, cloth; beatāc, a path, a way; optāc, an inch; and donāc, a fair, are declined like uatāc. Donāc has nom. pl. donāige or dontaiige.

## 59. coiteāc. a cock.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	coiteāc	coitig
Gen.	coitig	coiteāc
Dat.	coiteāc	coiteācāib
Voc.	ā coitig	ā coiteācā

60. Besides the above simple method of forming the genitive singular of most nouns of this declension, there are also the following modifications of the vowels of the nominative singular:—

Change eu or ēa in nom. sing. into ēi in gen. sing.

„	ia	„	„	ēi	„
„	o (short)	„	„	ui	„
io or ea		„ usually	„	i	„

All the other cases of these nouns are formed in accordance with the rules given above.

# Examples of Vowel-changes in Genitive Singular.

61. eun, a bird.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	eun	éin
Gen.	éin	eun
Dat.	eun	eunaib
Voc.	Δ éin	Δ euna

62. fear, a man.

Nom. & Acc.	fear	fír
Gen.	fír	fear
Dat.	fear	fearaib
Voc.	Δ fír	Δ feara

N.B.—The gen. of oiteán in island is oiteáin; of fear, grass, féir; and of fear, a man, fír.

63. Cnoc, a hill.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnoc	cnuic
Gen.	cnuic	cnoc
Dat.	cnoc	cnocaib
Voc.	Δ cnuic	Δ cnoca

64. The following nouns change ea into ei in genitive singular:—leantb, a child; neart, strength; cneap, skin; and ceart, right, justice. (Cnir and cirt are sometimes found as the genitives of cneap and ceart).

### Irregular Genitive Singular.

mac, a son,	has	genitive	m <sup>o</sup> o
bíad, food,	„	„	bíó
rian, a track,	„	„	rian
rrian, a bridle,	„	„	rrian
Órian, Bernard, Brian	„	„	Órian

neac, a person; and éinne, áonne (or áonneac) anybody, are indeclinable.

65. Some nouns of this declension form their nominative plural by adding e.

NOUN.	GENITIVE SING.	NOM. PLURAL.
onaç, a fair	áonaig	{ áontaighe áonaighe
doir, a door	doir	doirre
éigear, a learned man	éigir	éigre
aingeal, an angel	aingil	aingle
bótar, a road	bótar	bóitre
maorad or (maoat), a dog	maorad	maorade
rlábrad, a chain	rlábrad	rlábrade
marçad, a market	marçad	marçade

66. The following nouns take a in nominative plural:—peann, a pen; reot, a jewel; rlan, a surety. cneap, skin; meacan, a carrot or parsnip; tear, a tear; caor, a berry; rmeur, a blackberry; uball, an apple (pl ubla); focat (pl. focait or focta); riac,\* a debt (riac, pl. réic or réig, a raven); rgeut, news; and bruaç, a brink.

67. The following take ta, in nom. pl.:—reot, a sail; ceot, music; neut, a cloud; rgeut, a story; cogad,

\* This word is usually used in the plural; as ní fuil don riaca orm, I am not in debt.



war (pl. *cogta*\*) ; *cuan*, a harbour ; *uún*, a fort (pl. *uúnta* and *uúna*) ; *ceuo*, a hundred† ; *tion*, a net ; *ceap* a trunk of a tree (pl. *ceapta*) ; *múr* (pl. *múrta*), a wall.

68. Other nominative plurals—*clár*, a board, a table, makes *cláir* or *clápa* ; *tober*, a well, makes *tobai* or *tobera*, *tobaipea* or *toiberpea* : *rlua*g, a crowd, makes *rluaigte*.

69. Many nouns of this declension have two or more forms in the nominative plural. The regular plural is the better one, though the others are also used. The following are a few examples of such nouns :—*feap*, a man (pl. *fir*, *feapa*) ; *mac*, a son (pl. *mic*, *maca*) ; *leabap*, a book (*leabair*, *leabpa*) ; *arm*, an army (pl. *airm*, *arma*) ; *capall*, a horse (pl. *capaitt*, *caiple*).

70. The termination *-pa* has a collective, not a plural force ; just like *ry* in the English words *cavalry*, *infantry*, etc. This termination was formerly *neuter*, but now it is masculine or feminine ; the genitive masculine being *-pai*, the genitive feminine *-pai*be. Hence *tao*pa, a band of warriors, *mac*pa, a company of youths, *ea*pa, a number of steeds (*cavalry*), are not really plurals of *tao*, *mac*, and *ea*, but collective nouns formed from them. Likewise *éantait*, (spoken form, *éantait*e) is a collective noun meaning a flock of birds, or birds in general, and it is not really the plural of *éan*. However, *tao*pa and *éantait* are now used as plurals.

Appendix I. gives a list of nouns belonging to this declension.

\* *cogait*be is also used.

† When used as a noun.

## THE SECOND DECLENSION.

71. All nouns of the 2nd declension are feminine.\* They all end in consonants, but the consonants may be either broad or slender.

72. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding *e*, (if the last vowel of the nominative be broad it must be attenuated); and if the last consonant be *c* it is changed into *ḡ* in the genitive (except in words of one syllable).

73. The **dative singular** is got by dropping the final *e* of the genitive.

74. The **nominative plural** is formed by adding *Δ* or *e* (*Δ*, if final consonant be broad) to the nom. sing.

## Examples.

75.                      *lil*, a lily.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>lil</i>	<i>lite</i>
Gen.	<i>lite</i>	<i>lil</i>
Dat.	<i>lil</i>	<i>lilib</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ lil</i>	<i>Δ lite</i>

76.                      *cor*, a foot† or a leg.

Nom. & Acc.	<i>cor</i>	<i>corΔ</i>
Gen.	<i>coire</i>	<i>cor</i>
Dat.	<i>cor</i>	<i>corΔib</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ cor</i>	<i>Δ corΔ</i>

\* *τεαc* and *πλαb*, two masculine nouns, are sometimes given with the second declension. We give them as irregular nouns (par. 132).

† A foot in measurement is *τηριζ*. pl. *τηριστε*.

## 77. caitleac, a hag.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	caitleac	caitleaca
Gen.	caillige	caitleac
Dat.	caillig	caitleacaiB
Voc.	Δ caitleac	Δ caitleaca

78. Like nouns of 1st declension, the vowels of the nom. sing. are sometimes changed when the final consonant is attenuated in the genitive singular.

The following are the chief changes:—

Change *io* in the nom. sing. into *i* in the gen. sing.

„	eu	„	„	éi	„
„	ia	„	„	éi	„
„	o (short) sometimes	„	„	ui	„

In words of one syllable change *ea* into *eí* (but *ceapc*, a hen, becomes *cípcce*); in words of more than one syllable change *ea* into *i*.

## 79. beac, a bee.

	SINGULAR	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	beac	beaca
Gen.	beice	beac
Dat.	beic	beacaiB
Voc.	Δ beac	Δ beaca

## 80. zeug, a branch.

Nom. & Acc.	zeug	zeuga
Gen.	zéige	zeug
Dat.	zéig	zeugaiB
Voc.	Δ zeug	Δ zeuga

81.                      *ḡrian, a sun.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>ḡrian</i>	<i>ḡriana. ḡrianta</i>
Gen.	<i>ḡríne</i>	<i>ḡrian</i>
Dat.	<i>ḡrén</i>	<i>ḡrianaib</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ ḡrian</i>	<i>Δ ḡriana</i>

82.                      *long, a ship.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>long</i>	<i>longa</i>
Gen.	<i>luinge</i>	<i>long</i>
Dat.	<i>luing</i>	<i>longaib</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ long</i>	<i>Δ longa</i>

83.                      *ḡreum,\* a root.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>ḡreum</i>	<i>ḡreuma (or ḡreumača)</i>
Gen.	<i>ḡríme</i>	<i>ḡreum (ḡreumača)</i>
Dat.	<i>ḡrén</i>	<i>ḡreumaib (ḡreumačaub)</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ ḡreum</i>	<i>Δ ḡreuma (Δ ḡreumača)</i>

84.                      *áit, a place.*

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>áit</i>	<i>áite, áiteanna or áiteača</i>
Gen.	<i>áite</i>	<i>áit, áiteanna, áiteača</i>
Dat.	<i>áit</i>	<i>áitib, áiteannaib, áiteačaub</i>
Voc.	<i>Δ áit</i>	<i>Δ áite, áiteanna, áiteača</i>

The above are two examples of nouns with strong nominative plural (see par. 48).

## 85. In forming the genitive, nouns are sometimes

---

\*Also spelled *ḡreum* in Munster.

syncopated, as *buiréan*, a company, gen. *buiríne* (see pars. 33, 35); *bairéan*, a palace, gen. sing. *bairíne*.\*

### 86. Irregular Genitives Singular.

<i>clann</i> , a clan, children, makes	{ <i>clainne</i> , pl. <i>clanna</i> <i>clainne</i> ,
<i>deoch</i> , a drink,	„ <i>oige</i> , „ <i>deocha</i>
<i>sgian</i> , a knife,	„ <i>sgine</i> , „ <i>sgéana</i>
<i>briathar</i> , a (solemn) word,	„ <i>briéire</i> , „ <i>briathra</i>
<i>blátao</i> , buttermilk,	„ <i>bláitche†</i>
<i>latao</i> , mud, mire,	„ <i>laitche†</i>
<i>daibao</i> , a vat,	„ <i>daibche</i> „ <i>daibacha</i>
<i>agair</i> , a face,	„ <i>aighe</i> „ <i>aighe</i>

87. Many nouns of this declension form their nominative plural in *anna* or *aoa*. The final *a* of these terminations *may* be dropped in the genitive plural.

NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
<i>cúir</i> , a cause	<i>cúireanna</i>
<i>tuib</i> , an herb	<i>tuibeanna</i>
<i>deil</i> , a lathe	<i>deileanna</i>
<i>gluair</i> , a contrivance	<i>gluairéanna</i>
<i>béim</i> , a stroke	<i>béimeanna</i>
<i>tuair</i> , a prize, reward	<i>tuairéanna</i>
<i>léim</i> , a leap	<i>léimeanna</i>
<i>féim</i> , a course, a voyage	<i>féimeanna</i>
<i>áit</i> , a place	<i>áite</i> , <i>áiteanna</i> , <i>áiteaoa</i>
<i>luo</i> , a mouse	<i>luoa</i> , <i>luoanna</i> [ <i>teoao</i> ]
<i>sgoil</i> , a school	<i>sgoileanna</i> ( <i>sgoita</i> ), <i>sgoil-</i>

\* Note the dative singular of these nouns, *buiríon* and *bairíon*.

†Also *blátaige*.

†Also *lataige*.



NOM. SING.	NOM. PL.
céim, a step	céimeanna
fuaim, a sound	fuaimi na
uair, an hour, time	uairí, uairíeanna, uairíeannaí
rráio, a street	rráioí, rraíoeanna, rraíoeaí
páirc, a field	páircí, páircíeanna
feir, a festival	feiríeanna

88. Nouns that take *áda* in nominative plural—

obair, a work	oibreáda
óráio, an oration	óráioeáda
rlat, a rod	rlataí, rrlataáda
litir, a letter	litirí, litiríeáda
uib, an egg	uibí, uibíeáda
<b>raioir, a prayer</b>	<b>raioiríeáda</b>
dicíó, a disease	dicíoeáda, dicíoi
ciúmhair, an edge	ciúmhairíeáda
coicteoir, a fortnight	coicteoiríeáda, coicteoirí
truail, a sheathe, a scabbard	truailíeáda
leac, a flag, a flat stone	leacá, leacáda, leacraáda

89. The following take *te*, *te*, or *ta* in the nominative plural; *ao* may be added in the genitive plural:—*coil*\*, a wood; *túir*, a pillar, a prop; *tír*, a country (pl. *tíoraí*); *ágaíó*, face (pl. *áigte*); *rpeuir*, a sky, *rpeuirí*.

90. Sometimes when the last vowel of the nominative singular is *i* preceded by a broad vowel, the

---

\* *Coil* is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite nouns, par. 131.

genitive plural is formed by dropping the *ι*, as *ῥύτ*, an eye, gen. pl. *ῥύτ*; *ῥυάμ*, a sound, gen. pl. *ῥυάμ*, &c.

For a list of nouns ending in a broad consonant belonging to this declension, see Appendix II.

### THIRD DECLENSION.

91. The 3rd declension includes (1) personal nouns ending in *οίη* (all masculine), (2) derived nouns in *ἄτ* or *ἄο* (feminine), (3) other nouns ending in consonants which are, as a rule, masculine or feminine according as they end in broad or slender consonants.

92. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding *α*. If the last vowel of the nominative be *ι* preceded by a broad vowel, the *ι* is usually dropped in the gen., as *τοίη*, a will, gen. *τοτά*.

93. The **nominative plural** is usually the same as the genitive singular; but personal nouns ending in *οίη* add *ι* or *ιόε* to the nominative singular.

94. Most of the derived nouns in *ἄτ*, being abstract in meaning, do not admit of a plural. *μάλλᾱτ*, a curse, and a few others have plurals. *ῥυᾱτ*, cold, although an abstract noun in *ἄτ*, is masculine.

95. The vowels of the nominative often undergo a change in the formation of the genitive singular. These changes are just the reverse of the vowel changes of the 1st and 2nd declensions (see pars. 60 and 73).

Change ei, i or io (short) in nom. into ea in the genitive

„	u „ ui	„	o	„
„	éi	„	éa	„

### Examples.

96. cnám, \* a bone.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	cnám	cnáma
Gen.	cnáma	cnám
Dat.	cnám	cnámaib
Voc.	Δ cnám	Δ cnáma

97. fíon, wine.

Nom. & Acc.	fíon	fíona, fíonta
Gen.	fíona	fíon
Dat.	fíon	fíonaib
Voc.	Δ fíon	Δ fíona

98. cμor, a belt, a girdle.

Nom. & Acc.	cμor	cμeapa
Gen.	cμeapa	cμor
Dat.	cμor	cμeapaib
Voc.	Δ cμor	Δ cμeapa

99. feoil, flesh, meat.

Nom. & Acc.	feoil	feola
Gen.	feola	feoil
Dat.	feoil	feolaib
Voc.	Δ feoil	Δ feola

---

\*Also spelled cnám in nom. sing.

100.                   βάτορι, a boatman.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	βάτορι	βάτορι (βάτοριτε)
Gen.	βάτορα	βάτορι, βάτορι
Dat.	βάτορι	βάτορις (βάτορις)
Voc.	α βάτορι	α βάτορι (α βάτοριτε)

101.                   οριμ, masc., the back.

Nom. & Acc.	οριμ	οριμanna
Gen.	οριμα	οριμanna
Dat.	οριμ	οριμannaις
Voc.	α οριμ	α οριμanna

102.                   ζεμ, masc., a morsel, grip.

Nom. & Acc.	ζεμ	ζεμanna
Gen.	ζεμα	ζεμanna
Dat.	ζεμ	ζεμannaις
Voc.	α ζεμ	α ζεμanna

103. Some nouns of this declension, ending in ι or η, form their nominative pl. by adding τα or τε to the nom. sing. These may add α to form gen. pl., as—

μόν,* a bog,	nom. pl.	μόντε
τάιν, a drove,	„	τάιντε
βλιαόαιν, a year,	„	βλιαόαντα†

\* μόν is also 5th declension. See Heteroclite Nouns, par. 131.

† βλιαόονα after numerals, as οὐκ μβλιαόονα, eight years.

**104.** Some nouns of this declension form their nom. plural by adding *нна* to the gen. singular. These may drop the final *а* in the gen. plural:—

NOM. PLURAL.

ам, time	аманнта or аманна
рput, a stream	рпотa „ рпотанна
орум, m., a back	ороманна
гут, a voice	готa „ готанна
грем, m., a morsel	греаманна
сит, or ciot, a shower	ceata „ ceatанна
cleap, a trick	cleapa „ cleapанна
анам, a soul	анма „ анманна
дат, a colour	дaтa „ датанна
айм, a name	аймне, аймнеаца, анманна
маѳом, a defeat	маѳома, маѳоманна

**105. Other Nominatives Plural.**

гниѳом, a deed, an act makes гниѳомарта\*

connpat, a compact,

covenant „ connapтa

cáint, a tax „ cánaца

buaцаилл, a boy „ buaцаилли

cliamain, a son-in-law „ cliamнаца

leabaѳ, † f., a bed „ leabтa, leapтaца, leapтa

curo, a share, a portion „ coтaца, coтana

For a list of nouns belonging to this declension, see Appendix III.

\* Really pl. of гниѳомарѳ. † Cáin is also 5th declension.

‡ Also spelled leabaѳѳ.



## THE FOURTH DECLENSION.

**106.** The 4th declension includes (1) personal nouns in  $\alpha\iota\tau\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\upsilon\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$ ,  $\alpha\iota\gamma\epsilon$  (sometimes spelled  $\alpha\iota\tau\omicron$ ,  $\upsilon\iota\tau\omicron$ ,  $\alpha\iota\gamma\acute{\iota}$ ), which are all masculine; (2) diminutives in  $\iota\acute{\iota}\nu$  (said to be all masculine); (3) abstract derivatives formed from the gen. sing. feminine of adjectives (all feminine), as  $\xi\iota\tau\epsilon$ , brightness, from  $\xi\epsilon\alpha\tau$ ;  $\pi\acute{\epsilon}\iota\tau\epsilon$ , generosity, from  $\pi\iota\alpha\tau$ ;  $\acute{\alpha}\iota\tau\eta\epsilon$ , beauty, from  $\acute{\alpha}\lambda\upsilon\eta\eta\eta$ , &c.; (4) all nouns ending in vowels, and which do not belong to the 5th declension. To assist the student a list of the most important nouns of the 5th declension is given in the Appendix IV.

**107.** This declension differs from all others in having **all the cases of the singular exactly alike.**

**108.** The **nominative plural** is usually formed by adding  $\acute{\iota}$ ,  $\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$  or  $\alpha\tau\omicron\alpha$ .

**109.** The **genitive plural** is like the nom. pl., but  $\epsilon\alpha\tau$  is frequently added in other grammars. There is no necessity whatever for this, because both cases are pronounced alike.

**110.** Nouns of more than one syllable ending in  $\alpha$  form their nom. plural in  $\alpha\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\acute{\alpha}\iota$ , as  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha$ , a bag, pl.  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\tau\alpha\acute{\iota}$ ;  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha$ , a coat, pl.  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha\iota\tau\omicron\epsilon$ , or  $\kappa\omicron\tau\alpha\acute{\iota}$ .

## 111.                   caitín, masc., a girl.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	caitín	caitíní or (caitíníðe)
Gen.	caitín	caitíní (caitín) „ (caitíníðe)
Dat.	caitín	caitíníð „ (caitíníúíð)
Voc.	a caitín	a caitíní „ (a caitíníðe)

## 112.                   tígearna a lord.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. & Acc.	tígearna	tígearnaí(-aíðe)
Gen.	tígearna	tígearnaí(-aíðe)
Dat.	tígearna	tígearnaíð(-aíúíð)
Voc.	a tígearna	a tígearnaí(-aíðe)

113. The following nouns take *te* immediately after the last consonant to form the nominative plural:—

bailte, a town	plural bailte or bailteaí
rioinne, a surname	„ riointe
múlte, a mule	„ múlte
míle, a thousand, a mile	„ mílte*
léine, a shirt	„ léinte, léinteaí
teine,† a fire	„ teinte, teinteaí
cúinne, a corner	„ cúinte cúinní

114. The following nouns add *te* in nominative plural, viz., all nouns ending in *ðe* or *ge*—e.g. *cporðe*, a heart, pl. *cporðte*; also *caoi*, a way, a method; *ṛaoi*, a fool; *ṛaoi*, a wise man; *ṛṛaoi*, a druid; *ṛḷaoi*, a curl.

\* *míle*, a thousand, or a mile, is invariable after a numeral.

† *teine* is also 5th. See Heteroclite noun, par. 131.

ḡnó, a work (pl. ḡnóḡa),\* nřó, or nř, a thing (pl. neřte); ouine, a person, makes ouaoinē in nom. pl.

uinge, an ounce,	„	uingeḡa	„
earna, a rib,	„	earnaḡa	„

115. A few proper nouns, although not ending in a vowel or in, belong to this declension, and do not change their form in any of their cases, viz.:—  
páopais, Patrick; ḡearóio, Gerald; maurř, Maurice;  
Caḡaoir, Cahir.

The word tuḡḡ, a people, does not change in gen.

### THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

116. Most of the nouns belonging to this declension end in a vowel, and are, with a few exceptions, feminine.

117. The **genitive singular** is formed by adding a *broad consonant*.

This consonant varies in different nouns, but is usually n, nn, sometimes o, ó, or c. When the nominative singular ends in a consonant, a or ea comes between that consonant and the consonant added.

118. The **dative singular** is formed by attenuating the genitive. In the case of those nouns which form the genitive by adding c, the dative singular is usually like the nominative.

---

\*ḡnóḡaio is spoken in Kerry.

**119.** The **nominative plural**, as a general rule, is formed by adding **α** to the genitive singular. A few form their nominative plural by adding **ε** to the gen. sing. This is accompanied with syncope, as in **κάριοι**, friends; **νάμιοι**, enemies; **ζαῖτοι**, smiths; and **αἵτι**, rivers, which are the plurals of **καρά**, **νάμα**, **ζαῖα**, and **αἶ**, or **αἶα**.

Some others form the nominative plural by attenuating the genitive singular, as in **ταῦται**, ducks; **κοῖν**, hounds; **ἑξήκοντα**, twenty; **κόττις**, sheep; **κοῦροι**, neighbours.

The **genitive plural** is exactly like the genitive singular.

### Examples.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<b>120.</b>	<b>παῖς</b> , fem., a person.	
Nom. & Acc.	παῖς	παῖς
Gen.	παῖος	παῖος
Dat.	παῖϊ	παῖσιν
Voc.	ὦ παῖς	ὦ παῖς

<b>121.</b>	<b>καρά</b> , fem., a friend.	
Nom. & Acc.	καρά	καῖροι
Gen.	καράο	καράο
Dat.	καράϊο	καῖροις
Voc.	ὦ καρά	ὦ καῖροι

## SINGULAR.      PLURAL.

122.      ḡab̃a, masc., a smith.

Nom. & Acc.	ḡab̃a	ḡab̃ne
Gen.	ḡab̃ann	ḡab̃ann
Dat.	ḡab̃ainn	ḡab̃nib̃
Voc.	Δ ḡab̃a	Δ ḡab̃ne

123.      lač̃a, fem., a duck.

Nom. & Acc.	lač̃a	lač̃ain
Gen.	lač̃an	lač̃an
Dat.	lač̃ain	lač̃anaib̃
Voc.	Δ lač̃a	Δ lač̃ana

124.      cuir̃le, fem., a vein.

Nom. & Acc.	cuir̃le	cuir̃leanna
Gen.	cuir̃leann	cuir̃leann
Dat.	cuir̃linn	cuir̃leannaib̃
Voc.	Δ cuir̃le	Δ cuir̃leanna

125.      caora, fem., a sheep.

Nom. & Acc.	caora	caoir̃ig̃
Gen.	caorač̃	caorač̃
Dat.	caoraig̃	caorač̃aib̃, caorač̃aib̃
Voc.	Δ caora	Δ caorač̃a or Δ caorač̃a

126.      caṭ̃aoir̃, fem., a chair.

Nom. & Acc.	caṭ̃aoir̃	caṭ̃aoir̃eač̃a
Gen.	caṭ̃aoir̃eač̃	caṭ̃aoir̃eač̃
Dat.	caṭ̃aoir̃	caṭ̃aoir̃eač̃aib̃
Voc.	Δ caṭ̃aoir̃	Δ caṭ̃aoir̃eač̃a



## SINGULAR (no Plural).

127.      Nom. & Acc.    Éire (Ireland)  
                  Gen.        Éireann  
                  Dat.        Éirinn  
                  Voc.        a Éire
128.      Nom. & Acc.    Teampaí (Tara)  
                  Gen.        Teampaí  
                  Dat.        Teampaí or Teampaí  
                  Voc.        a Teampaí
129.      Nom. & Acc.    Alba (Scotland)  
                  Gen.        Alban  
                  Dat.        Albain  
                  Voc.        a Alba

130. The following nouns are used only in the plural, referring originally rather to the *inhabitants* of the place than to the place itself :—

## SACRANA, England.

Nom. & Acc.    SACRANA or SACRAIN

Gen.            SACRAN

Dat.            SACRANAIB

                  LAIGIN,            CONNACTA,            ULTAIB,  
                   Leinster.            Connaught.            Ulster.

Nom. & Acc.    LAIGIN            CONNACTA            ULTAIB

Gen.            LAIGEAN            CONNACT            ULAT

Dat.            LAIGINIB            CONNACTAIB            ULTAIB

A large list of the commonly used nouns, which belong to this declension, are given in Appendix IV.

### Heteroclite Nouns.

131. Heteroclite nouns are those which belong to more than one declension. The following are the chief nouns of this class. We give only the genitive case in the singular, as the other cases present no difficulty. The irregular nominative plurals only are given :—

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
briatar, a word	1 & 2	{ briatar briéire	
ríat, a shield	1 & 2	{ ríéit ríéite	
teine, a fire	4 & 5	{ teine teineab	teinte
beata, life	4 & 5	{ beata beatab	
rlíge, a way	4 & 5	{ rlíge rlígeab	rlígte
coill, a wood	2 & 5	{ coille coilleab	coillte
móin, a bog	3 & 5	{ móina móinab	móinte
talaim, m., land	1 & 5	{ talaim, m. talaiman, f.	
eorina, barley	4 & 5	{ eorina eorinan	
breiteamh, a judge	1 & 5	{ breiteimh breiteamhan	{ breiteamhain breiteamhna

NOUN.	DECLENSIONS.	GEN. SING.	NOM. PL.
feiceamh, a debtor	1 & 5	{ feicim feiceaman	{ feiceamain feiceamna
rrón, f., a nose	2 & 3	{ rróine rróna	
cúac, a cuckoo	1 & 2	{ cúaic, m. cúaiçe, f.	cúaic cúacá
cómra, a coffer, coffin	4 & 5	{ cómra cómrán	cómraí
cáin, a tax	3 & 5	{ cána cánaic	cána cánaic
coróin, a crown	2 & 5	{ coróine corónaic corónaic	corónaic

All abstract nouns ending in *ear* or *ar* may belong either to the 1st or 3rd declension; as, *doibnear*, pleasure, gen. *doibnir* or *doibneara*. Being abstract nouns they are seldom used in the plural.

### Irregular Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
132.	teac, masc., a house.	
Nom. & Acc.	teac, tig	tigte
Gen.	tige*	tigte(Δò), teac
Dat.	teac, tig	tigtib
Voc.	Δ teac, tig	Δ tigte

---

\* It has also the forms *toige* in gen. and *toig* in dative.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

րւիւծ, masc., a mountain.

Nom. & Acc.	րւիւծ	րւիւծե
Gen.	րւիւծե	րւիւծե
Dat.	րւիւծ, րւիւծ	րւիւծիւծ
Voc.	ձ րւիւծ	ձ րւիւծե

ձտաւր, masc., a father.

Nom. & Acc.	ձտաւր	ձտրե or ձտրեւձ
Gen.	ձտար	ձտրեւձ, ձտրեւձ
Dat.	ձտաւր	ձտրեւձիւծ
Voc.	ձ ձտաւր	ձ ձտրե or ձ ձտրեւձ

՞ւերծրւր, f., a sister (*by blood*).

Nom. & Acc.	՞ւերծրւր	՞ւերծրւրւձ
Gen.	՞ւերծրեւտար	՞ւերծրւրւձ
Dat.	՞ւերծրւար	՞ւերծրւրւձիւծ

In these words the ՞ր is pronounced like ր.

The words մաձաւր, *a mother*; Երաձաւր, *a brother (in religion)*; and ՞ւերծրաձաւր, *a brother (by blood)*, are declined like ձտաւր. The genitive of րւր, *a sister (in religion)*, is րեւտար (or րւրւ).

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

րի, masc., a king.

Nom. & Acc.	րի	րիշե, րիոշ, րիոշե
Gen.	րիոշ	րիշե, րիոշ
Dat.	րիշ	րիշիւծ
Voc.	ձ րի	ձ րիշե

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

bean, fem., a woman.

Nom. & Acc.	bean	mná
Gen.	mná	ban
Dat.	mnaoi	mnáib
Voc.	a bean	a mná

bó, fem., a cow.

Nom. & Acc.	bó	ba
Gen.	bó	bó
Dat.	buin	buaib
Voc.	a bó	a ba

Dia, masc., God.

Nom. & Acc.	Dia	Dée, Déite
Gen.	Dé	Dia, Déiteao
Dat.	Dia	Déitib
Voc.	a Dé, a Dia	a Dée

lá, masc., a day.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

Nom. & Acc.	lá	laete, laeteanta*
Gen.	lae	laeteao, laeteanta, lá
Dat.	ló, lá	laetib, laeteantaib
Voc.	a lá	a laete, a laeteanta

cpé, fem., soil, earth.

Nom. & Acc.	cpé	cpérbeana
Gen.	cpiao, cpérbeao	cpiao
Dat.	cpérò, cpé	cpérbeanaib
Voc.	a cpé	a cpérbeana

\* lá is generally used after numerals



## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

mí, fem., a month.

Nom. & Acc.	mí	míora†
Gen.	míora	míor
Dat.	mír, mí	míoraib

ceó, masc., a fog.

Nom. & Acc.	ceó	ceóðana, ceóca
Gen.	ciać, ceoiġ	ceó
Dat.	ceó	ceócaib

ġa, masc., a spear, javelin, sunbeam.

Nom. & Acc.	ġa	ġaete, ġaoi, ġaoite
Gen.	ġa, ġae, ġaoi	ġaoite(ā), ġat
Dat.	ġa	ġaetiġ, ġaoitiġ

ó or ua, masc., a grandson.

Nom. & Acc.	ó, ua	uí
Gen.	í, uí	ua
Dat.	ó, ua	iġ, uib
Voc.	a uí	a uí

ġé, masc., a goose

Nom. & Acc.	ġé or ġéā	ġéanna, ġéāa, ġéiōc
Gen.	ġé „ ġéiō, ġeoiō	ġéanna, ġéā
Dat.	ġé „ ġéā	ġéannaib, ġéāaib
Voc.	a ġé „ a ġéā	a ġéanna, a ġéāa

rriġ, fem., a fleshworm.

Nom. & Acc.	rriġ	rriġoeāca
Gen.	rriġoe	rriġoeāc(ā)
Dat.	rriġio	rriġoeācaib

† mí after numerals as oēt mí, 8 months: míonna is spoken in Kerry as plural of mí.

## CHAPTER III.

## The Adjective.

## I. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES.

**133.** In Irish the adjective agrees with the noun which it qualifies in gender, number, and case.

**There are four declensions of adjectives.** Adjectives are declined very much like nouns; the great difference is that they never\* take the termination *ib* in the dative plural (though formerly they did). The dative plural is invariably like the nominative plural.

Adjectives, in forming their genitive singular, undergo the same VOWEL-CHANGES as nouns, as—

*gorm*, blue, gen. masc. *gairm*  
*geal*, bright, „ *gail*, &c.

## FIRST DECLENSION.

**134.** All adjectives ending in a broad consonant, as *mór*, *bán*, *fionn*, &c., belong to the 1st declension.

**135.** When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a masculine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 1st declension (see *maor*, &c., pars. 55, 57), except that the nom., acc., dat., and voc. plural are always alike, and are formed by adding *a* to the nominative singular.

---

\*When used as nouns they take the termination.

**136.** When an adjective of the 1st declension agrees with a feminine noun, it is declined like a noun of the 2nd declension (see *cop*, par. 67, &c.), but it never takes *is* in the dative plural.

Adjectives ending in *ad* form their plural by adding *s*, both for masculine and feminine.

### Examples.

<b>137.</b>	<b>mór, big.</b>		
	<b>SINGULAR.</b>		<b>PLURAL.</b>
	<b>Masc.</b>	<b>Fem.</b>	<b>Masc. &amp; Fem.</b>
Nom. & Acc.	mór	mór	mórsa
Gen.	móir	móire	mór
Dat.	móir	móir	inórsa
Voc.	móir	móir	mórsa

<b>138.</b>	<b>geat, bright.</b>		
Nom. & Acc.	geat	geat	geata
Gen.	gíl	gíle	geat
Dat.	geat	gíl	geata
Voc.	gíl	geat	geata

<b>139.</b>	<b>oíread, straight, direct.</b>		
Nom. & Acc.	oíread	oíread	oíreada
Gen.	oírúg	oírúge	oíread
Dat.	oíread	oírúg	oíreada
Voc.	oírúg	oíread	oíreada

**140.** The following list of adjectives gives examples of the vowel-changes mentioned above. The genitive

masculine is given; the genitive feminine is formed by adding e:—

NOM.	GEN.		NOM.	GEN.	
lom	luim	bare	reapb	reipb	bitter
gorp	gairp	blue	reang	reing	slender
borb	buipb	rough	geup	geip	sharp
cpom	cpuim	bent	oipeac	oipig	straight
donn	duinn	brown	uaigneac	uaignig	lonely
boḡ	buig	soft	Albanac	Albanag	Scotch
boct	boict	poor	fionn	finn	fair
cpom	cpuim	heavy	fiat	feit	generous
meap	miip	active	fluic	fiic	wet
ceapc	ciipc (ceipc)	right	beag	big	small
deap	deip	pretty	cpion	cpin	withered
deapḡ	deipḡ	red	teann	teinn	stern

141. There are five or six adjectives of the first declension which are syncopated in the genitive singular feminine and in the plural:—

NOMINATIVE.	GEN. SING.		PLURAL.
	Masc.	Fem.	Both Genders.
uapat, noble	uapail	uairle	uairle
oileap, beloved, dear	oilip	oilre	oilre
reamap, fat	reamaip	reimpe	reampa
ipiol, low	ipil	irle	irle
geapp, short	ḡipp*	ḡioirpa (irreg.)	geappa

\* ḡeapp is sometimes used in the spoken language.

## SECOND DECLENSION.

142. All adjectives ending in a slender consonant, except those in *amait*, belong to the second declension.

In the singular all the cases, both masculine and feminine, are alike, *except the genitive feminine* which is formed by adding *e*.

In the plural both genders are alike. All the cases, with the exception of the genitive, are alike, and are formed by adding *e* to the nominative singular.

The genitive plural is the same as the nominative singular.

## Example.

143.

*maic̃*, good.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
	Masculine.	Feminine.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maice</i>
Gen.	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maice</i>	<i>maic̃</i>
Dat.	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maice</i>
Voc.	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maic̃</i>	<i>maice</i>

144. Notice the following examples of syncope in the genitive feminine and in the plural:—

<i>aoibinn</i> , gen. sing. fem. and pl.	<i>aoibne</i> , pleasant
<i>áluinn</i> , „ „	<i>áinne</i> ( <i>áille</i> ), beautiful
<i>mitir</i> , „ „	<i>mitre</i> , sweet

145. The following adjectives are irregular:—

<i>cóir</i> , gen. sing. fem. and plural	<i>cópa</i> , right, just
<i>deacair</i> , „ „	<i>deacra</i> , difficult
<i>rocair</i> , „ „	<i>rocpa</i> , easy



## THE THIRD DECLENSION.

**146.** The third declension includes all those adjectives which end in  $\alpha\mu\alpha\iota\tau$ . This termination has the same signification as the English affix *like* in warlike, or *ly* in manly, princely, &c.

In both numbers the two genders are alike. All the cases in the singular are the same, except the genitive, which is formed by adding  $\alpha$ . This is always accompanied by syncope. All the cases of the plural (except the genitive) are the same as the gen. sing. There are no exceptions or irregularities in this declension.

### Example.

<b>147.</b>	ῥεαῖναῖτ, manly.	
	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	Both Genders.	Both Genders.
Nom. & Acc.	ῥεαῖναῖτ	ῥεαῖναῖτα
Gen.	ῥεαῖναῖτα	ῥεαῖναῖται
Dat.	ῥεαῖναῖτ	ῥεαῖναῖτα
Voc.	ῥεαῖναῖτ	ῥεαῖναῖτα

## FOURTH DECLENSION.

**148.** All adjectives ending in a vowel belong to the fourth declension, as ῥαυτα, long; ὀρθα, golden. They have no inflexions whatever, all the cases, singular and plural, being exactly alike.

There are two exceptions—viz., *τε*, hot, warm; and *θεο*, alive. *Τε* (often spelled *τετ*), becomes *τεο* in the genitive singular feminine, and also in the plural of both genders.

*Θεο*, alive, becomes *θεοῦ* in the plural. In the singular it is quite regular, except after the word *Θεῖ*; its genitive is then *θι*, as *Ματ Θε θι*, the Son of the living God.

### Rules for the Aspiration of the Adjectives.

These rules really belong to Syntax, but for the convenience of the student we give them here.

149. (a) An adjective beginning with an aspirable consonant is aspirated in the nominative and accusative feminine singular, in the genitive masculine singular, and in the dative and vocative singular of both genders.

(b) The adjective is also aspirated in the nominative and accusative plural when the noun ends in a slender consonant.

### Exceptions to the Rules for Aspiration.

150. (a) An adjective beginning with *ο* or *τ* is usually not aspirated when the noun ends in *ο*, *η*, *τ*, *ι*, or *ρ* (dentals).

(b) *ς* and *ζ* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *ς*, *ζ*, or *ηζ*.

(c) *π* and *β* are usually not aspirated when the preceding word ends in *π*, *β*, or *μ*.

These exceptions apply to most rules for the aspiration of nouns as well as adjectives.

(d) The genitive of nouns of the 3rd and 5th declensions ought not to have the initial of the adjective following them aspirated. Usage, however, differs somewhat on this point.

(e) In the spoken language of Connaught the adjective is not aspirated in the dative singular masculine.

### Rules for Eclipsing the Adjective.

151. (a) The adjective is usually eclipsed in the genitive plural, even though the article is not used before the noun; and if the adjective begins with a vowel *n* is prefixed.

(b) The initial of an adjective following a noun in the dative sing. should, as a rule, be aspirated; but whenever the noun is eclipsed after the article the adjective is often eclipsed also; aspiration in this case is just as correct as eclipsis, and is more usual.

### Examples

152. Noun, Adjective and Article declined in combination.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
	an fear mór, the big man.	
Nom. & Acc.	an fear mór	na fir móra
Gen.	an fíir móir	na bfeair mór
Dat.	leir an bfeair mór	leir na fearaib móra
Voc.	a fíir móir	a feara móra

an creamy star beg, the green little shamrock.

Nom. & Acc. ἡ τεταμένη γὰρ     η̅α τεταμένης γάρᾱ  
              θεῶς                      θεῶςᾱ

Gen. na reamphóige glaire na reamphós nglar  
bige mbeas

Dat.      ὁ ν τρεαμπίδης γλαίρ    ὁ να ρεαμπίδαιβ  
               βίς                                  γλαρα βεαζα

Voc.     Δ    ῥεαμρός    ἑλαρ    Δ    ῥεαμρόσα    ἑλαρα  
              βεας                                  βεασα

an t'rean-bean boct, the poor old woman.

Nom. & Acc. an trean-bean na rean-mhá bocta  
boct

Gen.    na pean-mná na pean-ban mboct  
         boicté

Dat. τοῦ τρεῖς τοῦ να τρεῖς-ἑνῶν  
ἑνῶν τοῖς τοῖς

Voc.     Δ ῥεαν - θεαν    Δ ῥεαν-ἡνιά βοῦτα  
              βοῦτ

N.B.—When an adjective precedes its noun it is invariable.

### Comparison of Adjectives.

153. In Irish there are two comparisons—(1) the comparison of equality, (2) the comparison of superiority.

154. The comparison of equality is formed by placing *com* (or *co*), "as" or "so," before the adjective, and *te*, "as," after it. (This *te* becomes *ter* before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.)

If a verb occurs in the second portion of the sentence, *asur* (not *le*) must be used for the second “as” in *English*. *Ṭá Seagán com mór le Seumas*, John is as big as James. *Ní fuil ré com láidir leir an bpeir*, he is not as strong as the man. *Ní fuil ré com maith asur (ar) bí ré*, he is not as good as he was.

155. The comparison of superiority has three degrees—the positive, the comparative, and the superlative. The positive is the simple form of the adjective, as *bán*, *geat*. The comparative and superlative have exactly the same form as the genitive singular feminine of the adjective, as *báine*, *gile*.

156. The comparative degree is always preceded by some part of the verb *ir*, expressed or understood, and in almost every case is followed by the word *ná* (or *ioná*), “than.”

*Ir gile an ghrian ná an geatac,*

The sun is brighter than the moon.

*An fearr túra ná do dhearbhrádaí?*

Are you better than your brother?

157. In a comparative sentence the verb *ṭá* (or any other verb) may be used, but even then the verb *ir* must be used.

Whenever *ṭá* (or any other verb) is used in a com-



parative sentence, the comparative must be preceded by the word *níor* (i.e., *ní* or *níò*, a thing, and the verb *ir*) as—

Ṭá an ḡrian níor ḡile ná an ḡeatac,  
The sun is brighter than the moon.

An b'fuit tú níor fearr ná do dhearbhrádaí?  
Are you better than your brother?

158. As stated in previous paragraph *níor* = *ní* + *ir*. If the time of the comparison be past *ní ba* is used instead of *níor*. In conditional comparisons *ní baò* is employed.

Ba òóic liom go raib *úna* ní b'aoipoe ná *máipe*.  
I thought that *úna* was taller than *máipe*.

159. Every superlative sentence in Irish is a relative sentence. Thus instead of saying "the best man" we say "the man (who) is best"; for "the tallest man," we say "the man (who) is tallest." The word "who" in this case is never translated, for the obvious reason that there is really no simple relative pronoun in Irish.

160. If the sentence happens to be in the past or future "the best man" will have to be translated as "the man (who) was best" or "the man (who) will be best." In such cases *ir* or *ar* can never be used. *Ba* or *buò* must be used in the past tense.

If the first portion of the sentence contains a verb in the conditional mood, the conditional of *ir* (viz., *do* *bad* : *do* is often omitted) must be used.

The highest hill in Ireland, *an cnoc ir áirde i n-Éirinn*.

The biggest man was sitting in the smallest chair,

*Uí an fear ba mó na fuíde iní an scaéaoir ba luí.*

The best man would have the horse,

*Do beadh an capall ag an bfeair do b'feair*

(Lit. The horse would be at the man (who) would be best).

The English comparative of Inferiority is translated by *níor luí* followed by an abstract noun corresponding to the English adjective: e.g., *níor luí fearmáiteacht*, less manly.

### Intensifying Particles.

**161.** The meaning of an adjective can be intensified by placing any of the following particles before the positive of the adjective. All these particles cause aspiration.

*An*, very; *fíor* (or *fír*), very or truly (as truly good); *níog*, very; *níog máit*, very good.

*glé*, pure (as pure white); *nó*, too, excessively.

*rár*, exceedingly; *ár*, very (in a depreciating sense).

*máit*, good; *an-máit*, very good; *fíor-máit*, truly good; *nó-fuar*, too cold.

*rár te*, excessively hot (warm); *ár-íom*, very low; *ár-ghánua*, very ugly.

162. In the spoken language the adjective is sometimes intensified by repeating the positive twice, as—

bí ré tinn tinn, he was very sick.

ta ré trom trom, it is very heavy.

la rluic rluic, a very wet day.

163. Sometimes *oe* is annexed to the comparative; it is really the prepositional pronoun *oe*, of it.

ní mó<sup>oe</sup> (mó + *oe*) go raḡao. It is not likely that I shall go.

ní mí<sup>oe</sup> (meapa + *oe*) beic ag bpat opt! It is no harm to be depending on you!

164. Although the comparative and the superlative are absolutely alike in form, yet they may be easily distinguished:—

(1) By the context; the comparative can be used only when we are speaking of two persons or things, the superlative is always used for more than two.

(2) By the word *na* (than) which always follows the comparative, except when *oe* is used; the superlative is never followed by either.

165. When comparing adjectives (*i.e.*, giving the three degrees of comparison), it is usual to use *níor* before the comparative, and *ir* before the superlative, as—

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
bán	níor báine	ir báine
ḡlar	níor ḡlaire	ir ḡlaire

Remember that *níor* and *ir* change their forms according to the tense of the verb in the sentence.

## 166. Irregular Comparison.

POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.
beas, little or small	tuḡa
ῑaṡa, long	ῑuioe, ῑaioe, ῑia
mór, big	mó
otc, bad	meaṛa
maít, good	ῑeaṛṛ
ḡeaṛṛ, short	ḡioṛṛa
bṛeásḡ, * fine	bṛeásḡta
minic, often	minicí, mionca
te (teit), warm	teó
tiṛim, dry	tiṛima
ῑuṛuṛ(a) } easy	{ ῑuṛa
uṛuṛ } easy	{ uṛa
ionmúin, dear, beloved	ionmúine or annṛa
ḡaṛ, near (of place)	ḡoṛe
ῑoḡuṛ, near	{ ῑoṛḡe
	{ ῑoṛḡe
ṛeun, brave, strong	{ ṛéine
	{ ṛeire
ḡṛánṡa, ugly	ḡṛáinṡe
ḡṛo, high	{ ḡiṛoe
	{ ḡiṛoe
	{ ḡoiṛoe
iomṡa, many	mó or tia (more numerous)

Neaṛa and túṛḡe, nearer, sooner, are comparatives which have no positive.

N.B.—The superlatives of the above adjectives have exactly the same forms as the comparatives.

\* This word was formerly spelled bṛeásḡa or bṛeásḡta, and these forms may be used in the plural.

## 167. Numeral Adjectives.

CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
1, ἀν...ἀνᾶν	1st, <i>cevo</i> ,* ἀνῆμαθ
2, δύο	2nd, <i>δωρα</i> , <i>τάρνα</i> , <i>τόμαθ</i>
3, τρι,	3rd, <i>τρίομαθ</i> <i>τρεαρ</i>
4, <i>ceitpe</i>	4th, <i>ceatpamaθ</i>
5, <i>cúis</i>	5th, <i>cúigeaθ</i> , <i>cúigmaθ</i>
6, <i>ré</i>	6th, <i>reireaθ</i> , <i>rémaθ</i>
7, <i>reaót</i>	7th, <i>reaótmaθ</i>
8, <i>oót</i>	8th, <i>oótmaθ</i>
9, <i>naoi</i>	9th, <i>naomaθ</i>
10, <i>veic</i>	10th, <i>veaótmaθ</i> , <i>veiceaθ</i>
11, ἀν <i>veus</i>	11th, ἀνῆμαθ <i>veus</i>
12, δύο <i>véas</i>	12th, <i>δωρα</i> <i>veus</i>
13, τρι <i>veus</i>	13th, <i>τρεαρ</i> <i>veus</i> , <i>τρίομαθ</i> <i>veus</i>
14, <i>ceitpe véas</i>	14th, <i>ceatpamaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
15, <i>cúis</i> <i>veus</i>	15th, <i>cúigeaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
16, <i>ré</i> <i>veus</i>	16th, <i>reireaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
17, <i>reaót</i> <i>veus</i>	17th, <i>reaótmaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
18, <i>oót</i> <i>veus</i>	18th, <i>oótmaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
19, <i>naoi</i> <i>veus</i>	19th, <i>naomaθ</i> <i>veus</i>
20, <i>rice</i>	20th, <i>riceaθ</i>
21, ἀν <i>ir</i> (or <i>ar</i> ) <i>rice</i> ; ἀν <i>ar</i> <i>ricio</i>	21st, ἀνῆμαθ <i>ar</i> <i>ricio</i>

---

\* The c of *cevo* is usually aspirated after the article.

## CARDINALS.

- 22, ὁ ὁρ ὁά ἱρ φίε; ὁ ὁ  
or ὁά ἀρ φίε
- 23, τρὶ ἱρ φίε; τρὶ ἀρ  
φίε
- 30, τοεὶ ἱρ φίε [τρίοδα]
- 31, ἀον τοεὺ ἱρ φίε
- 32, ὁ ὁρ ὁά τοεὺ ἱρ φίε
- 37, ρεάετ τοεὺ ἱρ φίε
- 40, ὁά φίε [σεάτραδα]
- 41, ἀον ἱρ ὁά φίε
- 44, σεάταιρ or σείτρε ἱρ  
ὁά φίε
- 50, τοεὶ ἱρ ὁά φίε; λείτ-  
τέυτ, εαοζα
- 51, ἀον τοεὺ ἱρ ὁά φίε
- 60, τρὶ φίε [ρεάργα]
- 61, ἀον ἱρ τρὶ φίε
- 70, τοεὶ ἱρ τρὶ φίε  
[ρεάετμοζα]
- 71, ἀον τοεὺ ἱρ τρὶ φίε
- 80, σείτρε φίε [οότ-  
μοζα]
- 81, ἀον ἱρ σείτρε φίε
- 90, τοεὶ ἱρ σείτρε φίε  
[νόδα]

## ORDINALS.

- 22nd, ὁάρα ἀρ φίε; ;  
ὁάρα...φίεα
- 23rd, τρὶομάθ ἀρ φίε or  
τρεαρ ἀρ φίε
- 30th, τοεάεμάθ ἀρ φίε
- 31st, ἀονμάθ τοεὺ ἀρ  
φίε
- 32nd, ὁάρα τοεὺ ἀρ φίε
- 37th, ρεάετμάθ τοεὺ ἀρ  
φίε
- 40th, ὁά φίεοεάθ
- 41st, ἀονμάθ ἀρ ὁά φίε
- 44th, σεάτραμάθ ἀρ ὁά  
φίε
- 50th, τοεάεμάθ ἀρ ὁά φίε
- 51st, ἀονμάθ τοεὺ ἀρ ὁά  
φίε
- 60th, τρὶ φίεοεάθ
- 61st, ἀονμάθ ἀρ τρὶ φίε
- 70th, τοεάεμάθ ἀρ τρὶ φίε
- 71st, ἀονμάθ τοεὺ ἀρ τρὶ  
φίε
- 80th, σείτρε φίεοεάθ
- 81st, ἀονμάθ ἀρ σείτρε  
φίε
- 90th, τοεάεμάθ ἀρ σείτρε  
φίε



CARDINALS.	ORDINALS.
91, <i>don deus ir ceitpe</i> <i>ficio</i>	91st, <i>donnada deus ar</i> <i>ceitpe ficio</i>
100, <i>céad (ceud)</i>	100th, <i>ceudaó</i>
101, <i>don ir ceud</i>	101st, <i>donnada ar ceud</i>
200, <i>da ceud</i>	200th, <i>da ceudaó</i>
300, <i>tri ceud</i>	300th, <i>tri ceudaó</i>
400, <i>ceitpe ceud</i>	400th, <i>ceitpe ceudaó</i>
800, <i>ocht gceud</i>	800th, <i>ocht gceudaó</i>
1000, <i>míle</i>	1000th, <i>míleadaó</i>
2000, <i>da míle</i>	2000th, <i>da míleadaó</i>
3000, <i>tri míle</i>	3000th, <i>tri míleadaó</i>
4000, <i>ceitpe míle</i>	4000th, <i>ceitpe míleadaó</i>
1,000,000, <i>milliún</i>	1,000,000th, <i>milliúnaó</i>

### Notes on the Numerals.

168. There is another very idiomatic way of expressing the numbers above twenty-one, viz., by placing the word *ícead* alone after the first numeral:—*deic ícead*, 20: *ícead* is really the genitive of *íce*, so that the literal meaning of *deic ícead* is ten of twenty; *deic gcapall ícead*, 30 horses; *reach mba ícead*, 27 cows.

169. Whenever any numeral less than twenty is used by itself (i.e., not followed immediately by a noun), the particle *a*\* must be used before it. This *a* prefixes *n-* to vowels:—*a n-don*, one; *a dó*, two; *a n-ocht*, eight.

*Tá ré a ceathair a clog*, it is four o'clock.

*Tá ré teach-uair o'éir a dó*, it is half past two.

---

\* In Ulster and Munster the article *an* is used instead of this *a*.

170. Very frequently in modern times the particle  $\Delta r$  (=  $\Delta gup$ ) is used instead of  $ir$  in numbers.  $\Delta r$  in numbers is pronounced iss.

171.  $\Delta v\acute{o}$  and  $\Delta ceat\acute{a}ir$  can be used only in the absence of nouns. If the nouns be expressed immediately after "two" and "four,"  $v\acute{a}$  and  $ceitpe$  must be used.

172.  $\Delta on$ , one, when used with a noun almost always takes the word  $\Delta m\acute{a}in$  after the noun; as,  $\Delta on$   $feap$   $\Delta m\acute{a}in$ , one man.  $\Delta on$  by itself usually means "any;" as,  $\Delta on$   $feap$ , any man;  $\Delta on$   $l\acute{a}$ , any day. Sometimes  $\Delta on$  is omitted and  $\Delta m\acute{a}in$  only is used, as  $l\acute{a}$   $\Delta m\acute{a}in$ , one day.

173. Under the heading "Ordinals" two forms will be found for nearly all the smaller numbers. *The forms given first are the ones generally used.* As the secondary forms are often met with in books, they are given for the sake of reference.  $C\acute{e}\Delta v$ , first, is used by itself, but  $\Delta onm\acute{a}v$  is used in compound numbers, such as 21st, 31st, &c.

First, as an adverb, is  $\Delta r$   $v$ - $t\acute{u}r$  or  $\Delta r$   $v$ - $t\acute{u}ir$ , never,  $ceuv$ .

174. The  $v$  of  $v\acute{a}$ , two is always aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters,  $v$ ,  $n$ ,  $t$ ,  $l$ ,  $r$ , or after the possessive adjective  $\Delta$ , her.

The words for 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90, given in brackets, are the old words for these numbers; they are not used now, and are given simply for reference.

175. *πίce*, *ceυo*, and *míte*, together with the old words for 30, 40, 50, &c., are really nouns\* and can be declined.

Nom. <i>πίce</i>	gen. <i>πίceαo</i>	dat. <i>πίciο</i>	pl. <i>πίciο</i>
„ <i>ceυo</i>	„ <i>céio</i>	„ <i>ceυo</i>	„ <i>ceυoτα</i>
„ <i>míte</i>	„ <i>míte</i>	„ <i>míte</i>	„ <i>mítte</i>

The other words are 5th declension, and form their genitive by adding *o*.

176. *míte*, a thousand, or a mile, and *ceυo*, a hundred never change their forms after a numeral; *ναοι* *míte*, 9,000, or 9 miles.

### The Personal Numerals.

177. The following numeral nouns are used especially of persons. All, with the exception of *οίρ* and *beipt*, are compounds of the word *φear*, a man (the *φ* of which has disappeared owing to aspiration), and the numeral adjectives.

<i>αοναπ†</i> ( <i>αon-φear</i> )	one person
[ <i>οίρ</i> ( <i>οίαρ</i> )]	a pair, a couple
<i>beipt</i>	two persons, a couple‡
<i>τριύρ</i> (or <i>τριαρ</i> ) ( <i>τρι-φear</i> )	three persons
<i>ceατφαρ</i> ( <i>ceαταρ-φear</i> )	four persons
<i>cúigeap</i>	five persons
<i>peipeap</i>	six persons

---

\* See Syntax, par. 511 and 512.

† Used in the idiomatic expression for “alone.” See par. 654.

‡ *lánama*, a married couple.

mór-íear	}	seven persons
reáctar		
oútar		eight persons
naonbhar or nónbhar		nine persons
deicneabhar		ten persons
doáréus (dó-íear-déus)		twelve persons

**N.B.**—The singular form of the article is used before these numerals; as an cúigear fear, the five men.

### The Possessive Adjectives.

**178.** The term “possessive pronouns” has been incorrectly applied by many grammarians to the “possessive adjectives.” A pronoun is a word that can stand for a noun and be separated from the noun, as the words “mine” and “his” in the sentences, “This book is mine,” “This cap is his.” If I wish to say in Irish, “Did you see his father and mine?” I say, “An bhráthar a dtáir agur m’ dtáir” (not agur mo). The possessive adjectives in Irish can never stand alone; hence they are not pronouns.

**179.** The possessive adjectives are as follows:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mo, my	ár, our
do, thy	dur (or dár), your
a, his or her	a, their

**180.** a, his; a, her; and a, their, are very easily distinguished by their initial effects on the following word.

181. The *o* of *mo* and *ʋo* is elided whenever they are followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *ʃ*, as *m' ʃuinneós*, my window; *ʋ' átaír*, thy father.

182. Before a vowel *ʋo*, thy, is very often written *τ* or *ṫ*, as *ʋ' átaír*, *τ' átaír*, *ṫ' átaír*, thy father; even *n-átaír* is sometimes wrongly written.

183. The possessive adjectives may take an emphatic increase, but this emphatic particle always follows the noun, and is usually joined to it by a hyphen; and should the noun be followed by one or more adjectives which qualify it, the emphatic particle is attached to the last qualifying adjective.

### The Emphatic Particles.

184. The emphatic particles can be used with (1) the possessive adjectives, (2) the personal pronouns, (3) the prepositional pronouns, and (4) the synthetic forms of the verbs. Excepting the first person plural all the particles have two forms. When the word to which they are attached ends in a *broad* vowel or consonant use the broad particles, otherwise employ the slender.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1.	-ra, -re	-ne
2.	-ra, -re	-ra, -re
3.	{ Masc., -ran, -rean Fem., -re, -m	-ran, -rean

### Examples.

mo teac-ra, *my* house ; a teac-ran, *his* house ; ar  
oteac-ne, *our* house : mire, *myself* ; reirean, *himself* ;  
aca-ran, *at themselves* ; buaitim-re, *I strike*.

185. The word féin may also be used (generally as  
a distinct word) to mark emphasis, either by itself or  
in conjunction with the emphatic particles : as

mo teac féin, *my own* house

mo teac-ra féin, *even my* house

mo teac breás mór-ra, *my fine large* house

mo teac féin and mo teac-ra may both mean “my  
house,” but the latter is used when we wish to dis-  
tinguish our own property from that of another per-  
son ; as, your house and mine, o teac-ra agur mo  
teac-ra.

186. The possessive adjectives are frequently com-  
pounded with the following prepositions :—

i, in (ann), in ; le, with ; o, to ; ó, from ; and fa,  
under.

#### SINGULAR.

#### PLURAL.

i, in or ann, in.

im, am 'mo, in my

nár, inár, i n-ár, in our

io, ao, 'oo, in thy, in your

nbur, i nbur, in your

'na, i n-a, ina, in his, in her

na, i n-a, ina, in their

In the third person singular and plural iona, ionna, anna are also  
found written.



187.

te, with.

tem, te mo,\* with my

te n-ár, with our

teo, te to,\* with thy or your

te nbur, with your

te n-a, with his or her

te n-a, with their

188.

to, to.

tom', to mo,\* to my

tár, to our

too', to to,\* to thy or your

to bur, tá bur, to your

tá, to his or her

tá, to their

189.

o, from.

om, o mo,\* from my

o n-ár, from our

oo, o to,\* from thy or your

o nbu', from your

o n-a, from his or her

o n-a, from their

190.

fá or fó, under.

fám, fóm, under my

fá n-ár, fó n-ár, under  
our

fáto, fótó, under thy, your

fá nbur, fó nbur,  
under your

fá n-a, fó n-a, under his, her

fá n-a, fó n-a, under  
their

191. The following compounds are frequently used with verbal nouns:—

as, at.

asom, as mo,\* at my

'sár, sár, as ár, at our

asoo, as to,\* at thy, your

as bur, at your

asá, 'sá, sá, at his, her

asá, 'sá, or sá, at their

---

\* The forms marked with an asterisk are used in the North.

192. When “you” and “your” refer to one person, the singular words *tú* and *to* are used in Irish, *o’atair*, your father (when speaking to one person), *buir n-atair*, your father (when speaking to more than one.)

193. Those of the above combinations which are alike in form are distinguished by the initial effect they cause in the following word; as, *ó n-a tíg*, from his house; *ó n-a tíg*, from her house; *ó n-a tíg*, from their house.

194. The above combinations may take the same emphatic increase as the uncompound possessive adjectives; *óm tíg féin*, from my own house; *óm tíg breáḡ mór-ra*, from my fine large house.

### Demonstrative Adjectives.

195. The demonstrative adjectives are *ro*,\* this; *rin*,† that; and *úo*, that or yonder.

*ro* is frequently written *reo* when the vowel or consonant preceding it is slender.

These words come after the nouns they qualify, and should the noun be followed by any qualifying adjectives, *ro*, *rin* or *úo* comes after the last qualifying adjective.

It is not enough to say *peap ro* or *bean rin* for “this man” or “that woman.” The noun must

\* Also *ra*, *reo*, or *re*.

† Also *roin*, *rain* or *ran*.

always be preceded by the article. "This man" is *an fear ro*; "these men," *na fear ro*; *an bean ro*, this woman; *an bean rin*, that woman.

196. The word *ú* is used when a person or thing is connected in some way with the person to whom you speak or write; *an fear ú*, that man (whom you have seen or heard of); *an oíche ú*, that particular night which you remember; or in pointing out an object at some distance, as—

*An bpreiceann tú an bá* *ú*? Do you see that boat?

Also with the vocative case, as—

*A éileinn ú* *tall* *ad* *gan teanga*.

Thou skull over there that art without tongue.

### Indefinite Adjectives.

197. The chief indefinite adjectives are—*aon*, any; *éigin*, some, certain; *eile*, other; *uite* (*after* the noun), all, whole; and the phrase *ar bit*, any at all; *pé*, whatever.

*e.g.*, *aon lá*, any day; *aon éapall*, any horse; *ar tí* *uite*, the whole country; *tuine éigin*, a certain person; *an fear eile*, the other man. *An bfacea tú an leabhar i n-áit ar bit?* Did you see the book anywhere? *Ní fuil airgead ar bit agam*, I have no money at all. *Uiteamaic tob' ead* *an Siogaidhe*, *pé uairleact* *ro bí aige nó ná raib*. The Siogaidhe was a rascal, whatever nobility he had or hadn't.

198. The following words are *nouns*, and are fol.

lowed by a genitive or *ve* with the dative. As they are employed to translate English indefinite adjectives, we give them here:—

mórán, much	bʹruit mórán ríona aʒat, Have you much wine?
(an) iomaðo, a great deal, a great many	an iomaðo aipʒio, a great deal of money
beaʒán, little	beaʒán aʀáin, a little bread
(an) iomaʀca, too much	an iomaʀca uirʒe, too much water
an-curo, rather much	an-curo ʀatainn, rather much salt
ʀóʀain, } ʀáit, } enough, sufficient	ʀá mo ʀóʀain aʀáin aʒam, I have sufficient bread
oirpeað (aʒur), as much (as), so much (as)	an oirpeað rin óir, so much gold
tuilleað, more	tuilleað aʀáin, more bread
neapʀ, plenty, abundance	neapʀ aipʒio, plenty of money
curo, ʀoinn or ʀoinnt, a share, some	curo, ʀoinn or ʀoinnt óir, some gold
a lán, many, numerous	ʀá a lán ʀeap mbreáʒ i n-Éirinn. There are many fine men in Ireland

### 199. Translation of the word "Some."

(a) As has been said, *curo*, *ʀoinn* or *ʀoinnt* is used to translate the word "some," but there are other words used. as *bʀaon*, a drop, used for liquids; *ʀopnán*

or *tuipín*, a fistfull, used for hay, straw, corn, potatoes, &c.; *grainín*, a grain, used for meal, flour, tea, &c.; *pinginn*, a penny, used for money. All these words take a genitive.

(b) "Some of" followed by a noun is translated by *cuid* *de* followed by a dative case.

(c) "Some of" followed by a singular pronoun is translated by *cuid* *de*; when followed by a plural pronoun, by *cuid* *de*.

<i>Tá braon bainne agam,</i>	I have some milk
<i>Tá grainín riúca aige,</i>	He has some sugar
<i>Cuid de na fearaib,</i>	Some of the men
<i>Tá cuid de sin olc,</i>	Some of that is bad
<i>Tá cuid dea ro olc,</i>	Some of these are bad

### Translation of "Any."

200. (a) When "any" is used in connection with objects that are usually counted it is translated by *aon* with a singular noun; as *aon fear*, any man; *bfuil aon capall agat?* or *bfuil capall ar bit agat?* Have you any horses?

The following phrases followed by a genitive case are used for "any" with objects that are not counted: *aon spreim*, for bread, butter, meat, &c.; *aon veor*, for liquids; *aon grainín*, for tea, sugar, &c.; *bfuil aon spreim feola aige?* Has he any meat?

(b) "Any of" followed by a noun is translated by *aon* *duine* *de*, for persons; *aon ceann* *de*, for any kind of countable objects; *aon spreim* *de*, &c., as

above. An b'paca tú aon duine de na fearaib? Did you see any of the men? &c.

(c) "Any of" followed by a plural pronoun is translated by the phrases given in (b), but the preposition *as* is used instead of *de*; as—

Ní fuit aon céann aca annsin. There is not any of them there.

Ní raib aon duine asainn annso céana. Not one of us was here before.

### Distributive Adjectives.

201. *ḡac*, each, every, as *ḡac lá*, every day: *uite* (before the noun), every; the definite article, or *ḡac*, must be used with *uite*; as *an uite fear*, every man. *Uí ḡac uite céann aca tinn*. Every one of them was sick.

*ḡac re*, every other, every second; *ḡac re b'pocat*, every second word.

### 202. The Interrogative Adjectives.

*ca* or *cé*, what, as *cé méad*. what amount?  
i.e., how much or how many?

*ca n-áit*, what place? *ca n-ainm atá ort*? What is your name? *ca n-uair*, what hour? when?

In English we say "what a man," "what a start," &c., but in Irish we say "what the man," "what the start," as *caibé an geit do bainfeadh ré airt!* What a fright he would give her! (lit. he would take out of her).



## CHAPTER IV.

## The Pronoun.

203. In Irish there are nine classes of Pronouns:—Personal, Reflexive, Prepositional, Relative, Demonstrative, Indefinite, Distributive, Interrogative, and Reciprocal pronouns. There are no Possessive pronouns in Irish.

## 204. Personal Pronouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1st pers.	mé, I	rimn, we
2nd pers.	tú, thou	rib, you
3rd pers.	{ré, he rí, she	riab, they

Each of the above may take an *emphatic increase*, equivalent to the English suffix *self*.

## 205.

## Emphatic Forms of the Personal Pronouns.

1st pers.	mire, myself	rimne, ourselves
2nd pers.	tura, thyself	ribre, yourselves
3rd pers.	{reirean, himself rire, herself	riab-ran, themselves

206. The word *féin* is added to the personal pronouns to form the *reflexive pronouns*; as *eo buailear mé féin*, I struck myself.

The reflexive pronouns are as follows :—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
mé féin, myself	rinn féin, ourselves
tú féin, thyself	rib féin, yourselves
é féin, himself	
í féin, herself	iad féin, themselves

207. The above are also used as *emphatic pronouns*; as, Cuaðamar a baite, mé féin agus é féin. Both he and I went home.

**208. The Personal Pronouns have no declension.**

It has already been shown that mo, do, a, etc., which are usually given as the genitive cases of the personal pronouns, are not pronouns, but adjectives; because they can never be used without a noun.

The compounds of the pronouns with the preposition do (to) are usually given as the dative cases of the personal pronouns; but agam, agat, etc., or the compounds with any of the other prepositions in par. 216, are just as much the datives of the personal pronouns as dom, out, &c. Hence the *Irish personal pronouns have no declension*.

209. The Personal Pronouns have however *two forms*:—The conjunctive and the disjunctive. The conjunctive forms are used only immediately after a verb as its subject; in all other positions the disjunctive forms must be used. The disjunctive forms are also used after the verb ir

The reason why these forms follow ır is that the word immediately after ır is *predicate*,\* not *subject*; and it has just been stated that the conjunctive forms can be used only in immediate connection with a verb as its subject.

### Conjunctive Pronouns.

210. μέ, τύ, ρέ, ρί, ριnn, ριθ, ριαθ.

### Disjunctive Pronouns.

**211.**

mē,	{ τῦ, τῖ,	e,	i,	{ ronn, inn,	{ rið, ib,	iaθ,
-----	--------------	----	----	-----------------	---------------	------

In *mé, tú, tó*, the vowel is often shortened in Munster, when there is no stress or emphasis. It is shortened in *mé, ré, é, í* and *í* in Ulster, when there is no stress.

**212.** The disjunctive pronouns can be *nominatives* to verbs, but then they will be separated from the verbs: or they may be used in immediate connection with a verb *as its object*.

He is a man, ɪr fɛər ɛ (nominative).

He was the king, rob'é an pi é (both nominatives).

This is smaller than that, *ir tuğa é peo nã é piúo*  
(both nominatives).

I did not strike him, níor buaitear é (accusative).

• This statement will be explained later on. See par 589.

### The Neuter Pronoun **eað**.

**213.** The pronoun **eað** is most frequently used in replying to a question asked with any part of the verb **ir** followed by an indefinite predicate.\* **Nað breáð an lá é? Ir eað go deimín.** Isn't it a fine day? It is indeed. **An Safranac é? Ní n-eað.** Is he an Englishman? He is not.

This pronoun corresponds very much with the "unchangeable *le*" in French: as, *Etes-vous sage? Oui, je le suis.*

Whenever **ir** in the question is followed by a pronoun, **eað** cannot be used in the reply. **An é Cormac an rí? Ní n-é.** Is Cormac the king? He is not.

**ir eað** is usually contracted to **'reað** (shäh).

**214.** The phrase **ir eað** (**'reað**) is often used to refer to a clause going before; as, **i gCathair na Mart, ir eað, corait mé anéir.** In Westport, it was, that I slept last night. **Nuair ir mó an anfochain (anacain), ir eað, ir goipe an cabair.** When the distress is greatest, then it is that help is nearest.

**215.** In Munster when the predicate is an indefinite noun it is usual to turn the whole sentence into an **eað**-phrase; as—It is a fine day. **Lá breáð, 'reað é.** He is a priest. **Sagart, 'reað é.** He was a slave. **Daor, rob 'eað é.** Elsewhere these sentences would be, **ir lá breáð é; ir sagart é; ba daor é.**

---

\* For "indefinite predicate" refer to par. 585.

**Prepositional Pronouns**  
**or**  
**Pronominal Prepositions.**

**216.** Fifteen of the simple prepositions combine with the disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns; and to these combinations is given the name of Prepositional Pronouns or Pronominal Prepositions.

All these compounds are very important. As five or six of them occur most frequently these will be given first, and the remainder, if so desired, may be left until the second reading of the book. The important combinations are those of the prepositions, *at*; *on*; *to*; *with*; *from*; and *towards*.

All the combinations may take an emphatic suffix. One example will be given.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
<b>217.</b>	<i>at</i> or <i>with</i> .	
1st pers.	<i>am</i> , at <i>m</i>	<i>ainn</i> , at <i>us</i>
2nd pers.	$\begin{cases} \text{at} \\ \text{at} \end{cases}$ at thee	<i>aiB</i> , at you
3rd pers.	$\begin{cases} \text{at} \\ \text{at} \end{cases}$ at him at her	<i>a</i> , at them

**218.** The combinations of *at* with the emphatic suffixes.

1st pers.	<i>ampa</i> , at myself	<i>ainne</i> , at ourselves
2nd pers.	<i>atpa</i> , at thyself	<i>aiBpe</i> , at yourselves
3rd pers.	$\begin{cases} \text{at} \\ \text{at} \end{cases}$ erean, at himself <i>ai</i> ci, at herself	<i>acapan</i> , at themselves

	SINGULAR.	FLURAL.
219.	an, on.	
1st pers.	onm, on me	onainn, on us
2nd pers.	ont, on thee	onab, on you
3rd pers.	an, on him uipri or uipri, on her	ontā or onna, on them

220.	to, to.	
1st pers.	tom,* to me	toinn, to us
2nd pers.	toit, to thee	toab, toib, to you
3rd pers.	to to him oi, to her	toib, to them

The initial **t** of these combinations and also those of **te** are usually aspirated except after a word ending in one of the letters **v, n, t, l, r**.

221.	te, with.	
	tiom, with me	tiinn, with us
	teat, with thee	tiib, with you
	teip, with him	
	tei, } with her	teo, with them
	teitri, }	

222.	o, or ua,† from.	
	uaim, from me	uainn, from us
	uait, „ thee	uab, „ you
	uaiti,‡ „ him	uata, „ them
	uaitri „ her	

\* **oam** (= **tom**) is the literary and also the Ulster usage. The emphatic form is **toimra**, never **toimra**, except in Connaught.

† **ua** is never used as a simple preposition.

‡ **uav** and **uavie** (= **uaiti**) are also both literary and spoken forms



## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

## 223. cun, towards.

cugam,\* towards me

cugainn, towards us

cugac, }  
cugad, }

,, thee

cugaid, ,, you

cuige, ,, him

cuici, ,, her

cúca, ,, them

## 224. roim, before.

rómam, before me

rómainn, before us

rómac, }  
rómad, }

,, thee

rómaid, ,, you

roime, }  
roimir, }

,, him

roimpe, ,, her

rómpa, ,, them

## 225. ar, out.

aram, out of me

arainn, out of us

arac, }  
arad, }

,, thee

araid, ,, you

ar, ,, him

arici, ,, her

arca, ,, them

## 226. i, in (or ann) in.

ionnam, in me

ionnainn, in us

ionnac, ,, thee

ionnaid, ,, you

ann, ,, him

innti, ,, her

ionnta, ,, them

## 227. oe, off, from.

oiom, off or from me

oinn, off or from us

oiot, ,, thee

oib, ,, you

oe, ,, him

oi, ,, her

oiob, ,, them

\*The g in these combinations is aspirated in Munster, except in cuige.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

228.                    **ῥέ, ῥά, ῥαοί, under.****ῥύμ, under me****ῥύινν, under us****ῥύτ, „ thee****ῥύῖδ, „ you****ῥαοί, „ him****ῥύτα, „ them****ῥύτι, „ her**229.                    **ῥοίρ, between.****εαῶρᾰμ, between me****εαῶρᾰινν, between us****εαῶρᾰτ, „ thee****εαῶρᾰῖδ, „ you****ῥοίρ ἑ, „ him****εαῶρᾰῖα****ῥοίρ ἱ, „ her****(or εαῶρᾰ)****„ them**230.                    **ταρ, over or beyond.****ταρᾰμ or ταῶρᾰμ, over me****ταρᾰινν or ταῶρᾰινν, over us****ταρᾰτ or ταῶρᾰτ, „ thee****ταρᾰῖδ „ ταῶρᾰῖδ, „ you****ταρᾰῖρ, „ him****ταρᾰῖα „ ταῶρᾰῖα, „ them****ταρᾰῖρῖ or ταῶρᾰῖρῖ, „ her****ταρᾰῖα „ ταῶρᾰῖα, „ them**231.                    **τῥέ, through.****τῥίᾰμ, through me****τῥίᾰνν, through us****τῥίᾰτ, „ thee****τῥίᾰδ, „ you****τῥίᾰ, „ him****τῥίᾰτα, „ them****τῥίᾰτι, „ her**The **τ** of these combinations is often aspirated.232.                    **υμ, about.****υμᾰμ, about me****υμᾰινν, about us****υμᾰτ, „ thee****υμᾰῖδ, „ you****υμᾰῖ, „ him****υμᾰῖα, „ them****υμᾰῖρ, „ her**

## The Relative Pronoun.

In Old Irish there was a relative particle used after prepositions, and also a compound relative, but no simple relative in the nominative and accusative cases. The modern relative, in these cases, has arisen from a mistaken idea about certain particles. Before the imperfect, the past, and conditional the particle *eo* should, strictly speaking, be used. Certain irregular but often used verbs had also an unaccented first syllable, as *atá*, *eo-beirim*, *eo-éim*, &c. These particles and syllables being unaccented were generally dropped at the beginning, but retained in the body, of a sentence, where the relative naturally occurs. Hence they were erroneously regarded as relative pronouns, from analogy with other languages.

In Modern Irish the relative particle may or may not be used in the nominative and accusative cases.

Although this is the origin of the modern relative nevertheless *it is used as a real relative* in modern Irish. Whether we call this a relative particle or a relative pronoun is a mere matter of choice. We prefer the first name.

There is a relative frequently met with in authors, viz.—*noé*, meaning *who, which or that*. This relative is not used in modern spoken Irish, in fact it seems never to have been used in the spoken language.

233. In modern Irish there are three simple relatives, the relative particles *Δ* and *SO*, which signify *who, which, or that*; and the negative particle *nAC*, signifying *who...not, which...not, that...not*.

The relative *so* is not found in literature, but it is so generally used in the spoken dialect of Munster that it must be regarded as a true relative. *So* is not used as the subject or object of a *verb*, its use is confined to the *prepositional (dative)* case.

There are also the compound relatives *pé*, *gibé*, *cibé*, *whcever, whosoever, whatever*, and *Δ* (causing eclipsis) *what, that which all that*.

234. The relative particle *Δ* expressed or understood, causes aspiration; but when preceded by a preposition or when it means "*all that*," it causes eclipsis, as do *SO* and *nAC*.

An fear a buailim.

The man whom I strike.

An fear a buaileann mé.

The man who strikes me.

An buachaill nac mbeidh ag obair.

The boy who will not be at work.

An bean go bfuil an bó aici.

The woman who has the cow.

A gcaitim ran lá.

All that I spend per day.

Sin a raib ann.

That's all that was there.

'Do rghairt a raib láithead.

All who were present burst out laughing.

An áit 'na bfuil ré.

The place in which he is.

**235. The relative *a* when governed by a preposition, or when it means "all that," unites with *ro*, the particle formerly used before the past tense of regular verbs, and becomes *ar*. This *ar* unites with the prepositions *do* (to) and *le* (with) and becomes *dár* and *leir*.**

Ar cáitear ran lá.

All that I spent per day.

An fear dár gceallar mo leabhar. or

The man to whom I promised my book.

An fear ar gceallar mo leabhar do.

An trlat leir buaileadh é.

The rod with which he was beaten.

**236. The pronouns *cé* and *pé* unite with *ro*, but only with the verb *ir*.**

Cé 'r b'í féin? Who was she?

pé 'r b'é féin? Whoever he was.

**237. Whenever the relative follows a superlative, or any phrase of the nature of a superlative, use *oá* (= *oe* + *a*). Before the past tense of regular verbs *oá* becomes *oár* (= *oá* + *ro*)**

Béarras douit gac uile níó oá bfuil agam.

I will give you *everything* that I have.

Ir é rin an fear ir doiríoe dár buail liom riam.

That is the *tallest* man that I have ever met.

Ní maic leir don níó oá ocusar do.

He does not like a single thing I gave him.

### Demonstrative Pronouns.

**238.** The demonstrative pronouns are *ro* or *reo*, *this*; *rin*, *rain*, *roin*, *ran*, *that*; *riú* or *riúo*, *that (yonder)*. The secondary forms *o* or *eo*, *in*, and *iúo* are very common in colloquial usage in Connaught and Munster.

These secondary forms have sometimes been written *fo*, *fin*, etc.

*Ir píop rin.* That is true.

*'Sead ran.* The matter is so.

*Tá ré go n-aindeir agat,* You have it in a mess, so  
*tá ran* you have.

*B'in i an áit.* That was the place.

*Deirim-re gurb iúo é an* I say that that is the man  
*feap óib.* for you.

*B' in é críoc an rgeit.* That was the end of the

*An in é an boga?* Is that the box? [affair.

*Ní h-oi an áit.* This is not the place.

*B' in é an buacailt cuige.* That was the boy for it.

**239.** When we are referring to a definite object these pronouns take the form *é reo*, *i reo*, *iao ro*, *é rin*, *i rin*, *iao rain*, etc. This is especially the case when the English words "this," "that," etc., are equivalent to "*this one*," "*that one*," etc.

*Tóg é rin.* Lift (or take) that.

*'Sé reo an feap.* This is the man.

*'Dob' é rin Seagán.* That was John.

*'Sí rin Brigid.* That's Brigid.

*Cé h-iao ro?* Who are these?

*An é riúo Tomár.* Is that (person yonder)  
Thomas?

*Ní h-é, 'ré riúo é, or* No; that's he.

*riúo é é.*

'Sé reo = ír é reo ; 'Sé rin = ír é rin, etc.

In the spoken language the phrases ír é rin é, ír é riú é, etc, are very frequently contracted to rin é, rin í, riú é, etc.

Síú é.

That is he.

Síú é Thad̃.

Yonder is Thade.

Sin é an carúp.

That's the hammer.

The forms riné, riní, rióé, riói, are also frequently used.

Síóé atá oim.

That is what ails me.

Siní an áit.

That's the place.

Síóí annro í.

Here she is here.

Siní í.

That is she (or it).

Síóé é.

This is he (or it).

240. Sáú, yonder, qualifies a pronoun; whilst úó qualifies a noun: as, an fear úó, yonder man; a fear rúó, yonder woman's husband.

### Indefinite Pronouns.

241. The principal indefinite pronouns are—

các (gen. cáic), all, everybody, everyone else.  
uite, all.

éinne, éinneac̃ (aoin'ne), anybody.

The following are *nouns*, but they are used to translate English indefinite pronouns, hence we give them here :—

duine ar bít, anyone at all.

curo...curo eite, some...others

beagán, a few.



An t-áinig éinne ann? Did anyone come here?

"Cia h-é do dhíró an macraí?" ar cúl. "Who is he who drowned the youths?" said all.

Cé meud uball agat? (or An 'mó uball agat?)

Tá beagán agam. How many apples have you?

I have a few.

Uile dóib. To them all.

Do-geibmís uile an báp. We all die.

Do chualar ro uile reáca amail ríáile. All these went past like a shadow.

### Distributive Pronouns.

242. The distributive pronouns are:—*gach* each; *gach uile*, everyone; *gach aon*, each one, everyone; *ceachtar*, either. 'Cuile is a contraction for *gach uile*. *Ní fúil ceachtar aca agam*, I have not either of them.

*Díob a fíor ag gach aon*. Let each one know.

*Óir bíonn (bí) fíoc Dé leir (uir) gach h-aon cáilleap a reáct*. For the anger of God is on each one who violates His law.

N.B.—The tendency in present-day usage is to employ distributive adjectives followed by appropriate nouns rather than distributive pronouns: *e.g.* Everyone went home. *Do chualar gach uile tuine a baile*.

### Interrogative Pronouns.

243. The chief interrogative pronouns are:—**cía** or **cé**, who, which; **cao**, **ceuto**, or **caíodé**, what; **cé** or **ceuto** (**cía** **puo**), what; **cía** **leir**, whose; **cía** **aca** (**cioca**), which of them. **cé** (or **cía**) **agáib**, which of you.

<b>Cé</b> <b>rinne é rin</b> ?	Who did <b>that</b> ?
<b>Caó</b> <b>atá agat</b> ?	What have you?
<b>Caó é rin agat</b> ?	What is that you have?
<b>Caíodé atá ort</b> ?	} What ails you?
<b>Caó tá ort</b> ?	
<b>Cé aca ir fearr</b> ?	} Which of them is the better?
<b>Cioca ir fearr</b> ?	
<b>Cía an fear</b> ?	Which or what man?
<b>Cía na rin</b> ?	Which men?
<b>Cía an tuad</b> ?	What price?
<b>Caíodé an puo é rin</b> ?	What is that?
<b>Cé leir an leabhar</b> ?	Whose is the book?

244. Notice in the last sentence the peculiar position of the words. The interrogative pronoun always comes first in an Irish sentence, even when it is governed by a preposition in English. In Irish we do not say "With whom (is) the book?" but "Who with him (is) the book?"

Further examples of the same construction:—

Cé leir é ro?

Whose is this?

Cé aige an leabhar?

Who has the book?

A Sheagáin, dtiocfaid tú go John, will you come  
Gaillimh? Cao cúige? to Galway? *What*  
for?

Cia leir bfuil tú cormail? Whom are you like?

We may also say, Cia bfuil tú cormail leir?

Notice that the adjective *cormail*, *like*, takes *le*, *with*; not *do*, *to*.

245. N.B.—The interrogative pronouns are always nominative case in an Irish sentence. In such a sentence as, Cia buaiteadair? Whom did they strike? *cia* is nominative case to *ir* understood, whilst the suppressed relative is the object of *buaiteadair*. In *cia leir*, *cao cúige*, &c., *leir* and *cúige* are prepositional pronouns, not simple prepositions.

### Reciprocal Pronoun.

246. The reciprocal pronoun in Irish is *a céite*,\* meaning *each other*, *one another*. Cuir Finn a lámha i lámhaí a céite, Finn put their hands in the hands of one another. Do rgar Orgar agus Diarmuid le n-a céite. Oscar and Diarmuid separated from each other (lit. "separated with each other"). Buaiteadair a céite. They struck each other.

---

\* Literally, his fellow.

### Phrases containing the Reciprocal Pronoun.

ó céite,\* from each other, separated or asunder.

le céite,† together.

mar a céite, like each other, alike.

trí n-a céite, }  
tré n-a céite, } confused, without any order.

oiréad le céite, each as much as the other.

i n-oiaró a céite, one after the other, in succession.

ar gac párac i n-a céite, out of one desert into another

## CHAPTER V.

### THE VERB.

#### Conjugations.

247. In Irish there are two conjugations of regular verbs. They are distinguished by the formation of the future stem. All verbs of the first conjugation form the first person singular of the future simple in -*rao* or -*reao*, whilst verbs of the second conjugation form the same part in -*ócao* or -*eócao*.

\* ó céite, = ó n-a céite.

† le céite, = le n-a céite. This last form is often used and explains the aspiration in le céite

### Forms of Conjugation.

248. Every Irish verb, with the single exception of *is*, has three forms of conjugation:—The **Synthetic**, the **Analytic**, and the **Autonomous**.

249. The **synthetic**, or **pronominal form**, is that in which the persons are expressed by means of terminations or inflections. All the persons, singular and plural, with the single exception of the third person singular, have synthetic forms in practically every tense. The third person singular can never have its nominative contained in the verb-ending or termination.

The following example is the present tense synthetic form of the verb *mol*, *praise*:—

#### SINGULAR.

*molaim*, I praise.

*molair*, thou praisest.

*molann sé*, he praises.

#### PLURAL.

*molaimís*, we praise.

*molaoi*, you praise.

*molao*, they praise.

250. In the **analytic form** of conjugation the persons are not expressed by inflection; the form of the verb remains the same throughout the tense and the persons are expressed by the pronouns *placed after the verb*. The form of the verb in the third person singular of the above example is the form the verb has in the analytic form of the present tense.

The analytic form in every tense has identically the same form as the third person singular of that tense.

N.B.—The analytic form is generally employed in asking questions.

The following is the analytic form of the present tense of *mol*:—

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

*molaim*, I praise.

*molann sinn*, we praise.

*molann tú*, thou praisest.

*molann sib*, you praise.

*molann sé*, he praises.

*molann siad*, they praise

The analytic form is used in all the tenses, but in some of the tenses it is rarely, if ever, found in some of the persons: for instance, it is not found in the first person singular above. As the analytic form presents no difficulty, it will not be given in the regular table of conjugations.

251. We are indebted to the Rev. Peter O'Leary, P.P., for the following explanation of the **Autonomous Form** of conjugation:—

“This third form—the *Autonomous*—has every one of the moods and tenses, but in each tense it *has only one person*, and that person is only *implied*. It is really a personality, but it is not a specific personality. It is only a general, undefined personality.

“This third form of an Irish verb has some very unique powers. . . . I shall illustrate one. An English verb cannot of itself make complete sense alone; this form of an Irish verb can. For instance, ‘*Buailtear*’ is a complete sentence. It means, ‘A beating is being administered,’ or, ‘Somebody is striking.’ Irish grammarians have imagined that this



form of the verb is passive voice. No, it is not passive voice, for it has a passive of its own; and, again, all intransitive verbs (even the verb  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ) possesses this form of conjugation. The nearest equivalents in sense and use to this Irish form are the German '*mann*' and the French '*on*' with the third person singular of the verb."—*Gaelic Journal*.

The usual translation of the French phrase "*on dit*" is, "*It is said*." "*Is said*" is certainly passive voice in English, but it does not follow that "*dit*" is passive voice in French. The same remark holds with regard to the Irish phrase "*buaitear an gach*," which is usually translated, "*The dog is struck*." *Buaitear* is not passive voice; it is *active voice, autonomous form*, and *gach* is its object in the *accusative case*. The literal translation of the phrase is, "*Somebody strikes the dog*." The passive voice of *buaitear*, *someone strikes*, is *taitear buaite*, *someone is struck*.

252. As this is the first grammar that has adopted the term "*Autonomous form of the Verb*," we think it advisable to state that the form of the verb which we give as the *Autonomous form* is given in other Irish grammars as the *passive voice*. A fuller treatment of the *Autonomous Verb* will be found at the end of the book, where we endeavour to show that in *modern Irish*, at least, this form of the verb is *active voice*. The name by which this form of the verb ought to be called is not merely a matter of terms, for on it de-

pende the case of the following noun or pronoun : i.e., whether such noun or pronoun is the *subject* or *object* of the verb.

As all Irish scholars have not accepted the *Autonomous form* of the verb, since it appears that formerly, at least, the verb was not Autonomous, being inflected for the plural number, it has been suggested that both names be retained for the present. In the first edition of this grammar the term "*Indefinite*" was given to this form, but as the name "*Autonomous*," which means *possessing the power of self government*, is far more expressive, it has been adopted instead of "*Indefinite*."

As the Autonomous form has only one inflection for each tense, this inflection is given immediately after each tense in the tables of conjugation.

## MOODS AND TENSES.

**253.** Verbs have three moods, the **Imperative**, the **Indicative**, and the **Subjunctive**.

Some grammars add a fourth mood, the **Conditional**; and some omit the **Subjunctive**. The **Conditional** form, however, is always either **Indicative** or **Subjunctive** in meaning, and is here classed as a tense under the **Indicative Mood**.

The **Imperative** has only one tense, the **Present**. Its use corresponds to that of the **Imperative** in English.

The **Indicative Mood** has five tenses, the **Present**, the **Imperfect**, the **Past**, the **Future**, and the **Conditional**.

The **Present Tense** corresponds to the English Present, and like it usually denotes *habitual action*.

The so-called Consuetudinal or Habitual Present—i.e., the third person singular ending in -ann—in no way differs from the other parts of the Present in regard to time. The verb bí, however, has a distinct Present, bím, denoting habitual action. In English the Present—e.g., *I write*—generally denotes habitual action. Present action is usually signified by a compound tense, *I am writing*. So in Irish the Present, ṛṣṛíobaim, denotes *habitual action*, and present action is denoted by the compound tense, ṛám aṣ ṛṣṛíobáo. However, as in English, the Present Tense of certain verbs, especially those relating to the *senses* or the *mind*, denote *present* as well as *habitual action*—e.g., cluinim, *I hear*; creirim, *I believe*.

The **Imperfect Tense** is also called the *Habitual* or *Consuetudinal Past*. It denotes habitual action in past time; as, ṛo ṛṣṛíobaimn, *I used to write*.

The **Past Tense** is also called the *Perfect* and the *Preterite*. It corresponds to the Past Tense in English; as, ṛo ṛṣṛíobaf, *I wrote*.

Continuous action in past time is denoted by a compound tense, as in English—e.g., ṛo bíof aṣ ṛṣṛíobáo, *I was writing*.

The **Future Tense** corresponds to the Future in English: as ṛṣṛíobfao, *I shall write*.

The **Conditional** corresponds to the Compound Tense with “*should*” or “*would*” in English: as ṛo ṛṣṛíobfa, *thou wouldst write*.

The Conditional is also called the **Secondary Future**, because it denotes a future act regarded in the past: as, aṛubairt ré go ṛṣṛíobfao ré. He said that he would write.

In the **Subjunctive Mood** there are only two Tenses, the Present and the Past. This mood is used principally to express a wish, and also after certain conjunctions. See par. 550, &c.

### Active Voice, Ordinary Form.

**254.** Each Tense has the following forms:—

1. The action is merely stated, as—

Buaiteann Seagán an clár,  
John strikes the table.

2. The action is represented as in progress, as—

Tá Seagán ag buailt̃ an clár,  
John is striking the table.

3. The action as represented as about to happen—

Tá Seagán { cum } an clár to buailt̃,  
                  { ar tí }  
John is about (is going) to strike the table.

4. The action is represented as completed, as—

Tá Seagán t'éir an clár to buailt̃,  
John has just struck the table.

### Active Voice, Autonomous Form.

**255.** Each Tense has the following forms, corresponding exactly to those given in the preceding paragraph.

1. Buaitear an clár,

Someone strikes the table.

2. Τάταρ αἶς βυαλαὸ ἀν ἐλάρ,  
Someone is striking the table.
3. Τάταρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  ἀν ἐλάρ το βυαλαὸ,  
Someone is about to strike the table.
4. Τάταρ ὀ'έρ ἀν ἐλάρ το βυαλαὸ,  
Someone has just struck the table.

## 256. Passive Voice, Ordinary Form.

1. (This form is supplied by the Autonomous Active.)
2. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ τοά (or ἑά) βυαλαὸ,  
The table is being struck.
3. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  α βυαίτε,  
The table is about to be struck.
4. Τά ἀν ἐλάρ βυαίτε,  
The table has (just) been struck.

## 257. Passive Voice, Autonomous Form.

1. Τάταρ βυαίτε,  
Someone is struck.
2. Τάταρ πέ βυαλαὸ.  
Someone is being struck.
3. Τάταρ  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{ἐὺμ} \\ \text{ἀρ τῖ} \end{array} \right\}$  βεῖτ βυαίτε,  
Someone is about to be struck.
4. Τάταρ βυαίτε,  
Someone has (just) been struck.

**258. The Principal Parts of an Irish Verb are—**

(1) The 2nd sing. of the Imperative Mood.

(2) The 1st sing. of the Future Simple.

(3) The Past Participle (also called the Verbal Adjective).

(4) The Verbal Noun.

(a) The **Imperative 2nd. pers. sing.** gives the stem of the verb from which most of the other tenses and persons are formed.

(b) The **Future** tells to what conjugation (first or second) the verb belongs, and gives the stem for the **Conditional**.

(c) The **Past Participle** shows whether  $\tau$  is aspirated or unaspirated in the following persons, which are formed from the past participle—*i.e.*:

Present,    *2nd plural.*

Imperfect, *2nd singular.*

**Autonomous.**

*Imperative, Present, and Imperfect.*

**Verbal noun.**

*Gen. sing. and nom. plural.*

(d) With the **Verbal Noun** are formed the **compound tenses**.



The four following types include all verbs belonging to the first conjugation:—

### 259. Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	P. Participle.	Verbal Noun.	Meaning.
1.	mol	mol $\phi$ av	mol $\tau$ a	molav	praise
2.	neub	neub $\phi$ av	neub $\tau$ a	neubav	burst or tear
3.	bua $\iota$ t	bua $\iota$ t $\phi$ av	bua $\iota$ t $\epsilon$	bua $\iota$ av	strike
4.	$\phi$ o $\iota$ p	$\phi$ o $\iota$ p $\phi$ av	$\phi$ o $\iota$ p $\epsilon$	$\phi$ o $\iota$ p $\iota$ n	help, succour

**N.B.**—No notice need be taken of the variation in form of verbal nouns, as they cannot be reduced to any rule, but must be learned for each verb. The ending av or eav is that most frequently found, but there are numerous other endings. (See pars. 815 and 816).

**260.** (1) and (2) are the types for all verbs of the first conjugation whose stem ends in a broad consonant; whilst (3) and (4) are the types for the verbs of the same conjugation whose stem ends in a slender consonant.

As the conjugations of types (2) and (4) are identical with those of types (1) and (3) respectively, except the aspiration of the  $\tau$  in the endings mentioned in par. 258 (c), we do not think it necessary to conjugate in full the four types. We shall give the forms in modern use of the verbs mol and bua $\iota$ t, and then give a rule which regulates the aspiration of  $\tau$  in the Past Participle. (See par. 282).

## FIRST CONJUGATION.

In the following table the forms marked with an asterisk are not generally used in the analytic form. The forms in square brackets were used in early modern Irish, and are frequently met with in books. Alternative terminations are given in round brackets.

**261. IMPERATIVE MOOD.**

**SINGULAR.**

1st. —————

2nd. mot, praise thou

busil, strike thou

Brd. mo<sup>1</sup> a<sup>o</sup> rē, let him praise

buileatò ré

PLURAL.

1. {molaimis (-amuis) } let us {buailimis (eantuis)  
 {molani } praise {buailiam

2. μοῦναί το, praise (you)

## ከሀገሪቱ

8.  $\begin{cases} \text{molai}^{\circ}\text{oi}^{\circ}, \\ \text{molav}^{\circ}\text{doi}^{\circ}, \end{cases}$  let them praise buai<sup>o</sup>oi<sup>o</sup>

**Autonomous.**

moltau

buaitear

The negative particle for this mood is *na*.

**262.** INDICATIVE MOOD.

### Present Tense.

SING. 1.\*mo<sup>l</sup>aim, I praise

\*buaɬim, I strike

2.  $\mu\sigma\lambda\alpha\iota\eta$ , &c.

ԽԱՃԻՆ

3. molann<sup>a</sup> ré

busileann<sup>c</sup> ré

PLUR. 1. μοῦλαιμιθ (μουιθ)

busalimio (-imio)

2. molann ribb

busileann rib<sup>d</sup>

### 3. molale

bua1110

 $a[\text{molal}^{\circ}]$ 

$b[mol\tau\Delta\sigma i]$

c[**b**uΔ<sub>1</sub>L<sub>1</sub>ψ]

$$d[\text{bu}\Delta\text{il}\tau\acute{\text{i}}]$$

<b>Autonomous.</b>	Moltaṛ	buaiteaṛ
<b>Relative form.</b>	ṁolaṛ	buaiteaṛ
<b>Negative.</b>	ní molaím,	I do not praise.
"	ní buaitir,	You do not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	An molaínn ré?	Does he praise?
"	An mbuaitim?	Do I strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	Nac molaio?	Do they not praise?
"	Nac mbuaiteann ré?	Does he not strike?

## 263.

## Imperfect Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. *molaínn, I used to praise	*buaílinn
	2. *moltá, &c.	*buaíteá
	3. molaó ré	buaiteaó ré
<b>PLUR.</b>	1. molaímír (-amuir)	buaitimír (or imír)
	2. molaó ríḃ	buaiteaó ríḃ
	3. { molaioíṛ molaíḃaoíṛ	buaitíṛ
<b>Autonomous.</b>	Moltaoi,	Buaití.
<b>Negative.</b>	ní molaínn,	I used not praise.
"	ní buaiteaó ré,	He used not strike.
<b>Interrogative.</b>	An moltá?	Used you praise?
"	An mbuaitíṛ?	Used they strike?
<b>Neg. Interrog.</b>	Nac molaínn?	Used I not praise?
"	Nac mbuaílinn?	Used I not strike?

## 264.

## Past Tense.

<b>SING.</b>	1. molaṛ, I praised	buaiteaṛ
	2. molaíṛ	buaitir
	3. mol ré	buaíṛ

PLUR. 1. mólaman	buaileaman
2. mólabap	buaileabap
3. mólavap	buaileavap
Autonomous. Molav	buaileav
Negative. Níon mólap,	I did not praise.
„ Níon buail ré,	He did not strike.
Interrogative. An mólair?	Did you praise?
„ An buailear?	Did I strike?
Neg. Interrog. Nár mól ré?	Did he not praise?
„ Nár buaileamar?	Did we not strike?

### 265. Future Tense.

SING. 1. molfav, I shall praise	buailfav
2. molfair, thou wilt praise	buailfair
3. molfair ré, &c.	buailfair ré
PLUR. 1. molfairimí (-amuir)	buailfairimí (imí)
2. molfair rib <sup>a</sup>	buailfair rib <sup>b</sup>
3. molfair	buailfair
Relative form. molfair	buailfair
Autonomous. Molfair <sup>c</sup>	buailfair <sup>d</sup>
Negative. Ní molfav,	I shall not praise.
„ Ní buailfair ré,	He will not strike.
Interrogative. An molfair ré?	Will he praise?
„ An mbuailfav?	Shall I strike?
Neg. Interrog. Nac molfair?	Will you not praise?
„ Nac mbuailfair?	Will they not strike?

<sup>a</sup>[molfairí]  
<sup>c</sup>[molfairéap]

<sup>b</sup>[buailfairí]  
<sup>d</sup>[buailfairéap]

## 266. Conditional or Secondary Future.

SING.	1. mōtpainn, I would praise	buaítpinn
	2. mōtpá	buaítpéá
	3. mōtpaó ré	buaítpaó ré
PLUR.	1. mōtpaimír (pamuír)	buaítpimír (pimír)
	2. mōtpaó ríó	buaítpaó ríó
	3. { mōtpaíóir mōtpaóaoir	buaítpíóir
Autonomous.	Mōtpaí	buaítpí
Negative.	Ní mōtpainn,	I would not praise.
"	Ní buaítpéá,	You would not strike
Interrogative.	An mōtpá,	Would you praise?
"	An mbuaítpaó ré,	Would he strike?
Neg. Interrog.	Náé mōtpaó ré?	Would he not praise?
"	Náé mbuaítpimír?	Would we not strike?

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

### 267. Present Tense.

SING.	1. mōtaó	buaíteáó
	2. mōtaí	buaíteí
	3. mōtaíó ré	buaíteíó ré
PLUR.	1. mōtaímíó (-amíó)	buaíteímíó (-ímíó)
	2. mōtaíó ríó <sup>a</sup>	buaíteíó ríó <sup>b</sup>
	3. mōtaíó	buaíteíó
Autonomous.	mōtáí	buaíteáí

The negative particle is náí, which always aspirates when possible.

268.

## Past Tense.

SING. 1.	molainn	buaílinn
2.	molta	buaítead
3.	molao ré	buaileao ré
PLUR. 1.	molaimís (amuir)	buaílimís (-imís)
2.	molao sib	buaileao sib
3.	{ molairís molaoaoir	buaílirís
Autonomous.	moltaoi	buaíltí
Verbal Noun.	molao	buaíao
Verbal Adj.	molta	buaíte

## NOTES ON THE MOODS AND TENSES.

## The Present Tenses.

269. The Present Tense is always formed by adding *aim, air, &c.*, to the stem when the last vowel is broad; if the last vowel is slender add *im, ir, eann, &c.* The last syllable of the first person plural is often pronounced rapidly—*e.g.*, *molamuir* (*mul'-a-mwid*), *ceirimir* (*k'red'imid*); but in the South of Ireland this syllable is lengthened, *molaimí* (*mul'-a-meed*), *ceirimí* (*k'red'-imeed*). Verbs of more than one syllable ending in *is* add *mí*, not *imí*, in the first person plural of this tense.

270. In Ulster the ending *mí* of the first person plural is very often separated from the verb, and used instead of the pronoun *rim* as *Connaic mí é*. We saw him; *Connaic ré mí*. He saw us. On no account should this corruption be imitated by the student.



271. The *old* form of the third person singular ended in *aiò* or *iò*, and the analytic forms *found in books*, and sometimes in the northern dialect, are got from this form: as *mołaiò rinn*, we praise.

272. The analytic form is not usually found in the first person singular of this tense, nor is the synthetic form often used in the second person plural.

### The Imperfect Tense.

273. The initial consonant of this tense is usually aspirated in the active voice, when possible.

The termination *aiò* or *eiò* in the 3rd sing. of this tense, as also in the Imperative and Conditional, is pronounced *ac*, or *am*.

274. When none of the particles *ní*, *an*, *nac*, &c., precede the Imperfect Tense, *oo* may be used before it. This *oo* may be omitted except when the verb begins with a vowel or *r*. The compound particles, *níor*, *ar*, *nár*, *sur*, *cár*, &c., can *never* be used with the Imperfect Tense.

275. Whenever the word "*would*" is used in English to describe what used to take place, the Imperfect Tense, not the Conditional, is used in Irish, as—

He *would* often say to me. *Ir minic doiseiaíó ré liom.*

### The Past Tense.

276. In the Past Tense active voice the initial consonant of the verb is aspirated. The remark which

has just been made with regard to the use of *oo* before the Imperfect Tense applies also to the Past Tense.

In the Autonomous form *oo* does not aspirate, but prefixes *n* to vowels.

277. With the exception of the aspiration of the initial consonant, the third person singular of this tense is exactly the same as the second person singular of the Imperative (*i.e.*, the stem of the verb).

278. The particle formerly used before the Past Tense was *po*. It is now no longer used by itself, but it occurs in combination with other particles.

The most important of these compounds are:—

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| (1) <i>Δη</i> , whether ( <i>an + po</i> ).      | <i>Δη buait ré?</i> Did he strike?                               |
| (2) <i>Ση</i> , that ( <i>go + po</i> ).         | <i>Deiη ré ση buait ear é.</i><br>He says that I struck him.     |
| (3) <i>Σάη</i> , where ( <i>ca + po</i> ).       | <i>Σάη ceannuigir an capall?</i><br>Where did you buy the horse? |
| (4) <i>Μη</i> , unless ( <i>muna + po</i> ).     | <i>Μη buait ré</i> , unless he struck.                           |
| (5) <i>Νη</i> , not ( <i>ní + po</i> ).          | <i>Νη ηπερο ré.</i> He did not believe.                          |
| (6) <i>Νάη</i> or <i>νάσαη</i> , whether ...not. | <i>Νάη ηπερο ré?</i> Did he not believe?                         |

- (7) **Óar, to whom (oo, to + a + po).** **An fear óar gatlár mo leabhar.** The man to whom I promised my book.
- (8) **Le, by or with which (le + a + po).** **An maroe le buaire é,** The stick with which they beat him (or he was beaten).

**279. The compounds of po aspirate.** These compounds are used with the Past Tense of all verbs except the following:—**raib**, was; **cug**, gave or brought; **rug**, bore; **raca**, saw; **táinig**, came; **fuair**, found, got; **veacair**, went; **veáirna**, made or did.

The compounds of po are used in some places before **cug** and **táinig**.

**N.B.**—**Veacair** and **veáirna** are used instead of **cuair** and **pinne** after negative and interrogative particles. Instead of **veacair** and **veáirna**, **cuair** and **óin** (**óin**) are used in Munster.

### The Future Tense and Conditional.

**280.** All the inflections of the Future and Conditional in the first conjugation begin with the letter **r**, which in the spoken language is generally pronounced like "h." This "h" sound combines with the letters **b**, **v** and **g** (whenever the stem ends in these) changing them in sound into **p**, **t**, **c**, respectively.

κηρορεαυ is usually pronounced k'ret'-udh

φάστρυ „ „ fau'-kudh

ρῥήοβρυ „ „ shgree-pudh

**N.B.**—ρ is sounded in the second sing. Conditional active and in the Autonomous form.

281. The particle ρο, causing aspiration, may be used before the Conditional when no other particle precedes it.

Note that the terminations of the Imperative Mood, the Imperfect Tense, and the Conditional are almost the same, excepting the letter ρ of the latter.

#### Rule for the Aspiration of τ of Past Participles.

282. The τ of the past participle is generally aspirated except after the letters ϕ, η, τ, ι, σ, ῥ, ῥ, ῥ, and (*in verbs of one syllable*) ῥ.

There is a great tendency in the spoken language *not* to aspirate the τ in all verb inflexions after consonants: *e.g.*, τυγτα, τυγταρ, ρειρταρ, etc.

283. This participle cannot be used like the English participle to express action. *He was praised* is generally μοταῖ ε; very seldom ῖ ρε μοττα. *The Irish participle has always the force of an adjective* denoting the complete state, never the force of an *action in progress*.

284. After ρ the Past Participle denotes what is *proper or necessary*: as, ῖ μοττα ῖνι ε. He is not to be praised by you. This form, called the **Participle of Necessity**, should probably be regarded as distinct

from the ordinary past participle, as it may occur in verbs which have no past participle, *e.g.*:—

“Ír deimín naé bfuil tuine naé beitte óó ar coméao oim.” “It is certain that there is no person *who will not have to be* on his guard against me.” (Letter of Seán Ó Néill, 1561.) “Tuigtear ar an rgeut, naé beitte oo neac out i n-euóócar.” It may hence be learned that *it is not proper* for anyone to fall into despair. ní beitte ag a feunao (or simply, ní reunta). It must not be denied. Here beitte is the *Participle of Necessity* of the verb bí.

## 285. Derivative Participles.

ion-molta	in-peubta	ion-buailte	ion-fóirte
ro-molta	ro-peubta	ro-buailte	ro-fóirte
oo-molta	oo-peubta	oo-buailte	oo-fóirte

286. The prefix ion- or in- denotes *what is proper or fit to be done*: as ion-molta, fit to be praised, deserving of praise.

The prefix ro- denotes *what is possible or easy to do*: as ro-peubta, capable of being burst, easy to burst.

287. The prefix oo- denotes *what is impossible or difficult to do*: as oo-buailte, incapable of being struck, hard to strike.

288. These derivative participles seem to be formed rather from *the genitive of the verbal noun* than from the participle: as faáail, finding.

ro-faáaila, easily found. oo-faáaila, hard to find.

## 289. Declension of Verbal Noun.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
Nom. } Acc. }	molað	molta
Gen.	molta	molað (molta)
Dat.	molað	moltaib
Nom. } Acc. }	bustað	bustaite
Gen.	bustaite	bustað (bustaite)
Dat.	bustað	bustaiteib

290. Many verbal nouns are seldom or never used in the plural. As a rule the genitive singular of the verbal noun is identical in form with the past participle; but many verbal nouns are declined like ordinary nouns: nearly all those ending in *act*, *ait*, and *amain* belong to the 3rd declension—*e.g.*, *ḡabáit*, act of taking; gen., *ḡabáta: iut*, running; gen. *peata: teanamain*, act of following; gen. *teanamna: riubai*, act or walking; gen. *riubait: fáir*, act of growing; gen. *fáir*, &c.

## SECOND CONJUGATION.

291. The second conjugation comprises two classes of verbs—(1) derived verbs in *ig* or *uig*; and (2) syncopated verbs.



**292. Syncopated verbs** are those in which the vowel in the final syllable of the stem is omitted when any termination *commencing with a vowel* is added: as  $\tau\alpha\delta\alpha\iota\tau\eta$ , *speak*;  $\tau\alpha\delta\eta\alpha\iota\mu$  (not  $\tau\alpha\delta\alpha\iota\mu$ ), *I speak*. Verbs of more than one syllable whose stem ends in  $\iota\tau$ ,  $\iota\eta$ ,  $\iota\pi$ ,  $\iota\rho$ ,  $\iota\eta\varsigma$ , belong to this class.

### VERBS IN $\iota\varsigma$ (- $\alpha\iota\iota\varsigma$ ).

**293.**

#### Principal Parts.

Type.	Imper.	Future.	Past Participle.	V. Noun.	Meaning.
1.	$\beta\alpha\iota\iota\varsigma$	$\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\upsilon$	$\beta\alpha\iota\iota\varsigma\tau\epsilon$	$\beta\alpha\iota\iota\upsilon\varsigma\tau\alpha\upsilon$	gather
2.	$\ceann\iota\iota\varsigma$	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\upsilon$	$\ceann\iota\iota\varsigma\tau\epsilon$	$\ceann\acute{\alpha}\tau$	buy

**294.** Except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, all verbs in  $\iota\varsigma$  and  $\alpha\iota\iota\varsigma$  are conjugated like  $\beta\upsilon\alpha\iota$  (first conjugation), except that the  $\tau$  is aspirated in all terminations beginning with that letter. It is, therefore, necessary to give only the *Future* and *Conditional* in full.

**295.**

#### Future.

##### SINGULAR.

1. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\upsilon$ , I shall gather.	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\upsilon$ , I shall buy
2. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ ,	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\eta$ .
3. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon\rho\acute{\epsilon}$ ,	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon\rho\acute{\epsilon}$ .

##### PLURAL.

1. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\mu\iota\upsilon\theta$ ( $-\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\mu\iota\upsilon\theta$ ),	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\mu\iota\upsilon\theta$ ( $-\acute{\epsilon}\alpha\mu\iota\upsilon\theta$ ).
2. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon\rho\iota\theta$ ,	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon\rho\iota\theta$ .
3. $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon$ ,	$\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .

Relative.  $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\eta$ .  $\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\eta$ .

Autonomous.  $\beta\alpha\iota\epsilon\acute{o}\tau\alpha\eta$   $\ceann\acute{o}\tau\alpha\eta$ .

296.

**Conditional.****SINGULAR.**

- |   |                       |
|---|-----------------------|
| 1. <i>báileócaínn</i> , I would gather. | <i>ceannócaínn</i> .  |
| 2. <i>báileóctá</i> ,                   | <i>ceannóctá</i> .    |
| 3. <i>báileócaó ré</i> ,                | <i>ceannócaó ré</i> . |

**PLURAL.**

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| 1. <i>báileócaimís</i><br>(- <i>amuis</i> )      | <i>ceannócaimís</i><br>(- <i>amuis</i> ).     |
| 2. <i>báileócaó rib</i> ,                        | <i>ceannócaó rib</i> .                        |
| 3. { <i>báileócaíóir</i><br><i>báileócaóaoir</i> | { <i>ceannócaíóir</i><br><i>ceannócaóaoir</i> |

**Autonomous. báileóctai****ceannóctai**

297. In early modern usage, when the stem ended in *-uig*, preceded by *o*, *n*, *t*, or *r*, these consonants were usually attenuated in the Future and Conditional: as *áruig*, *raise*, future *áruócaó*; *raluig*, *soil*, future *ralócaó*; but nowadays *áruócaó*, *ralócaó*, &c., are the forms used.

**Syncopated Verbs.**

298. The personal endings of syncopated verbs vary somewhat according as the *consonant commencing* the last syllable of the stem is broad or slender.

Type (1). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a broad consonant*,\* as *ruaḡair* (*róḡair*), *proclaim*.

Type (2). Stems in which the last syllable *commences with a slender consonant*, as *coigil*, *spare*.

---

\* A few of these take *te* in past participle; as *orgail*, *open*, *orgailte*; *ceangail*, *bind*, *ceangailte*. The parts of these verbs [258 c.] which are formed from the past participle will, of course, have slender terminations, *e.g.*, *o'orgailteá*, *you used to open*.

299. In early modern usage the Future is formed by lengthening the vowel sound of the last syllable of the stem from *αι* or *ι* to *εό*. In the case of Type 1 the broad consonant which commences the final syllable of the stem must be made slender. Examples: *ινηρ*, *ιννεοραιο*, *I shall tell*; *τιβιρ*, *τιβεοραιορ*, *you will banish*; *ιμηρ*, *ιμεοραιο ρε*, *he will play*; *κοιγρ*, *κοιγεοραιο*, *I shall spare*; *ρυσγαιρ*, *ρυσγειοραιο*, *they will proclaim*; *ο'ρυσγειοραιο ρε*, *he would proclaim*; *κοοαιρ*, *κοιβεοραιο*, *I shall sleep*; *κοιβεοραιορ*, *I would sleep*.

300. In the present-day usage the Future stem is formed as if the verb ended in *ιγ* or *αιγ*: by adding *-οε* in Type 1 and *-εοε* in Type 2.

### 301. Principal Parts.

	Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	ṽ. Noun.
Type (1). <i>ρυσγαιρ</i>		<i>ρυσγηοεο</i>	<i>ρυσγαρτε</i>	<i>ρυσγηα(ο)</i>

### 302.

Type (2). <i>κοιγρ</i>	<i>κοιγεοεο</i>	<i>κοιγιτε</i>	<i>κοιγιτε</i>
------------------------	-----------------	----------------	----------------

### 303. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

SING. 1. —	—
2. <i>ρυσγαιρ</i> , proclaim	<i>κοιγρ</i> , spare
3. <i>ρυσγηο ρε</i>	<i>κοιγεο ρε</i>
PLUR. 1. <i>ρυσγαιμρ</i>	<i>κοιγιμρ</i>
2. <i>ρυσγαιο</i>	<i>κοιγιο</i>
3. <i>ρυσγαιορ (-αοορ)</i>	<i>κοιγιορ</i>
Autonomous. <i>ρυσγαρταρ</i>	<i>κοιγιτεαρ</i>

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

304.

Present Tense.

SING. 1.	fuasnaim, I proclaim	coigtim, I spare
2.	fuasnair	coigtir
3.	fuasnann ré <sup>a</sup>	coigleann <sup>c</sup> ré
PLUR. 1.	fuasnaimí	coiglimí
2.	fuasnann sib <sup>b</sup>	coigleann sib <sup>d</sup>
3.	fuasnaí	coiglit
Relative.	fuasnar	coiglear
Autonomous.	fuasartaí	coigitear

305.

Imperfect Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuasnann	coiglinn
2.	o'fuasartaí	coigilteá
3.	o'fuasnaó ré	coigleáó ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuasnaimí	coiglimí
2.	o'fuasnaó sib	coigleáó sib
3.	o'fuasnaíoir (-oaoir)	coiglití
Autonomous.	fuasartaí	coigilte

306.

Past Tense.

SING. 1.	o'fuasnar	coiglear
2.	o'fuasnaí	coigtir
3.	o'fuasnaí ré	coigil ré
PLUR. 1.	o'fuasnamar	coigleamar
2.	o'fuasnaibí	coigleabí
3.	o'fuasnaí	coigleáí
Autonomous.	fuasnaó	coigleáó

<sup>a</sup>[fuasnaí]<sup>b</sup>[fuasartaí]<sup>c</sup>[coiglit]<sup>d</sup>[coigilte]

307.

## Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

1. fuasróðað	coigleððað
2. fuasróðair	coigleððair
3. fuasróðair þé	coigleððair þé

## PLURAL.

1. fuasróðaimíð	coigleððaimíð
2. fuasróðair þib	coigleððair þib
3. fuasróðair	coigleððair

Relative Form. fuasróðar coigleððar

Autonomous. fuasróðtar coigleððtar

308.

## Conditional.

SING. 1. o'fuasróðainn	coigleððainn
2. o'fuasróðtá	coigleððtá
3. o'fuasróðað þé	coigleððað þé
PLUR. 1. o'fuasróðaimír	coigleððaimír
2. o'fuasróðað þib	coigleððað þib
3. o'fuasróðair þir	coigleððair þir
Autonomous. fuasróðtái	coigleððtái

309.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

SING. 1. fuasrað	coigleað
2. fuasrair	coiglar
3. fuasrair þé	coiglar þé
PLUR. 1. fuasraimíð	coiglimíð
2. fuasrair þib	coiglar þib
3. fuasrair	coiglar
Autonomous. fuasratar	coiglatar

### 310. Past Tense.

SING. 1.	fuasgnainn	coiglinn
2.	fuasgná	coigilteá
3.	fuasgnáó ré	coigleáó ré
PLUR. 1.	fuasgnaimir	coiglimir
2.	fuasgnáó rib	coigleáó rib
3.	fuasgnaióir	coiglióir

Autonomous, fuasgnáóí coigilte

### 311. Past Participle and Participle of Necessity.

fuasgná coigilte

### 312. Compound Participles.

ion-fuasgná	ion-coigilte
ro-fuasgná	ro-coigilte
do-fuasgná	do-coigilte

### 313. Verbal Nouns.

	SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
NOM. } ACC. }	fuasgna(ó) (fuasgnait) fuasgná	
GEN.	fuasgná	fuasgna(ó) (fuasgná)
DAT.	fuasgna(ó) (fuasgnait) fuasgnáóib	
NOM. } ACC. }	coigilt	—
GEN.	coigilte	—
DAT.	coigilt	—

314. In stems of Type (2) ending in *ri*, the Participle is usually in the form *gná*, not *gnáí*, as *óibíri*, *banish*: *óibearná*, *banished*; *imíri*, *play*; *imeárná*, *played*.

The endings formed on the participle [see par. 258 c.] follow this change, e.g., Imperfect 2nd singular, *óibearná*; Present Auton., *óibearnáir*, &c.



### 315. General Rules for the formation of Verbal Noun.

(a) As a general rule verbs of the first conjugation form their verbal noun in  $\Delta\theta$ , if the final consonant of the stem be broad; in  $\epsilon\Delta\theta$ , if it be slender, as—

ṡún, shut	ṡún $\Delta\theta$
míll, destroy	mílle $\Delta\theta$
mot, praise	mo $\epsilon\Delta\theta$
léiḡ, read	léiḡ $\epsilon\Delta\theta$ .

(b) When the last vowel of the stem is  $\imath$  preceded by a broad vowel, the  $\imath$  is *usually* dropped in the formation of the verbal noun, as—

bua $\imath$ l, strike	bua $\epsilon$ l $\Delta\theta$
ṡó $\imath$ ḡ, burn	ṡóḡ $\Delta\theta$
ḡoin, wound	ḡon $\Delta\theta$
bṡú $\imath$ ḡ, bruise	bṡúḡ $\Delta\theta$

The  $\imath$  is not dropped in—

caoin, lament	caoine $\Delta\theta$
rḡaoil, loose	rḡaoile $\Delta\theta$
rṡua $\imath$ n, reflect	rṡuaine $\Delta\theta$

(c) Verbs of the second conjugation ending in  $\imath$ n,  $\imath$ l or  $\imath$ p generally form their verbal noun by adding  $\tau$ , as—

ṡí $\imath$ p, banish	ṡí $\imath$ p $\tau$
cor $\imath$ n, defend	cor $\imath$ n $\tau$ (cornamh)
la $\imath$ ḡa $\imath$ p, speak	la $\imath$ ḡa $\imath$ p $\tau$
coiḡil, spare	coiḡil $\tau$

(d) Derived verbs ending in  $\iota\zeta$  form their verbal noun by dropping the  $\iota$  and adding  $\alpha\theta$ ; as,  $\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\upsilon\iota\zeta$ , *raise*,  $\acute{\alpha}\rho\iota\upsilon\alpha\theta$ .

(e) Derived verbs in  $\iota\zeta$  form their verbal noun by inserting  $u$  between the  $\iota$  and  $\zeta$  and then adding  $\alpha\theta$ ; as  $\mu\acute{\iota}\nu\iota\zeta$ , *explain*,  $\mu\acute{\iota}\nu\iota\upsilon\alpha\theta$ .

**316.** There are, however, many exceptions to the above rules. The following classification of the modes of forming the verbal noun will be useful.

(a) Some verbs have their verbal noun like the stem, *e.g.*,  $\rho\acute{\alpha}\rho$ , *grow*;  $\acute{o}\iota$ , *drink*;  $\rho\acute{\iota}\tau$ , *run*;  $\rho\acute{n}\acute{\alpha}\mu$ , *swim*, &c.

(b) Some verbs form their verbal noun by dropping  $\iota$  of the stem, *e.g.*,  $\kappa\upsilon\iota$ , *put or send*,  $\kappa\upsilon$ ;  $\kappa\omicron\rho\iota\zeta$ , *check*,  $\kappa\omicron\rho$ ;  $\rho\zeta\upsilon\iota$ , *cease*,  $\rho\zeta\upsilon$ ;  $\zeta\upsilon\iota$ , *weep*,  $\zeta\upsilon$ , &c.

(c) Some verbs add  $\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota$  or  $\epsilon\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota$  to the stem to form their verbal noun, *e.g.*,  $\kappa\alpha\iota\iota$ , *lose*,  $\kappa\alpha\iota\iota\epsilon\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota(\tau)$ ;  $\kappa\pi\epsilon\omicron$ , *believe*,  $\kappa\pi\epsilon\omicron\epsilon\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota(\tau)$ ;  $\rho\alpha\iota$ , *stay*,  $\rho\alpha\iota\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota(\tau)$ ,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\iota$ , *follow*,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\iota\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota(\tau)$ ;  $\rho\zeta\alpha\rho$ , *separate*,  $\rho\zeta\alpha\rho\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota(\tau)$ , &c.

In the spoken language  $\tau$  is usually added to the classical termination  $\alpha\acute{\mu}\alpha\iota\iota$ .

(d) A few add  $\alpha\iota$  or  $\epsilon\alpha\iota$  for the verbal noun, *e.g.*,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\zeta$ , *knock down*,  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\zeta\alpha\iota$ ;  $\tau\epsilon\iota\zeta$ , *let or permit*,  $\tau\epsilon\iota\zeta\epsilon\alpha\iota$ ;  $\tau\pi\epsilon\iota\zeta$ , *abandon*,  $\tau\pi\epsilon\iota\zeta\epsilon\alpha\iota$ ;  $\tau\epsilon\iota\zeta$ , *throw or cast*,  $\tau\epsilon\iota\zeta\epsilon\alpha\iota$ .

(e) A few add *am* or *eam*, e.g., *rear*, stand, *rearam*; *cait*, spend, consume, *caiteam*; *deun*, do or make, *deunam* (or *deunad*); *feit*, wait, *feiteam*.

(f) A small number end in *ait* or *ḡait*, as *ḡab*, take, *ḡabait*; *faḡ*, find, *faḡait*; *faḡ*, leave, *faḡait*; *feao*, whistle, *feaoḡait*.

A fairly full list of irregular verbal nouns is given in Appendix V.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

317. In Old and Middle Irish the conjugation of verbs was very complex, but by degrees the varieties of conjugations became fewer, and nearly all verbs came to be conjugated in the same way. At the commencement of the modern period (i.e., about the end of the sixteenth century) about fifteen verbs in common use retained their old forms. These are now classed as irregular. Excepting occasional survivals of older forms, all the other verbs had by this time become regular; so that from the stem of the verb it was possible in nearly every instance to tell all its forms except the *verbal noun*.

During the modern period even the irregular verbs have, through the operation of analogy, shown a tendency to adopt the forms of the modern regular conjugations.

### *atám*, I AM.

318. The correct spelling of this verb is undoubtedly *atám*, but long since it has lost its initial *a*, except when it occurs in the middle of a sentence, where it usually has a relative force. Some persons, by confounding this initial *a*, which really belongs to the verb, with the modern relative particle *a*, write the *a* separated from the *at*: as *a atá* 'instead of *atá*.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

319.	—	bímír, let us be
	bí, be thou	bíòirò, let you be
	bíòò ré, let him be	bíòíir. let them be

Autonomous, bítear.

The negative particle is ná.

All the persons, except the 2nd sing., are often written as if formed from the spurious stem bíò: *e.g.*, bíòeasò ré.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 320. Present Tense—Absolute.

## SYNTHETIC FORM.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
τάίμ, I am	τάίμίò, we are
τάίη, * thou art	τάίíò, τάίταοι, you are
τάί ré, he is	τάίò, they are

Autonomous, τάίτार.

## Present Tense (Analytic Form).

τά mé, I am	τά íínn, we are
τά tú, thou art	τά ííò, you are
τά ré, he is	τά ííao, they are

## 321. Present Tense—Dependent.

ííííim	ííííímíò
ííííir	ííííííò
ííííí ré	íííííò

Autonomous, ííííítear.

---

\* The early modern form, viz., ताοι, is still used in Munster, *e.g.*, Cionnup ताοι? (or Cionnup ताοि'ò tú?) *How are you?*

Negatively.	Interrogatively.	Neg. Interrog
I am not, &c.	Am I, &c.	Am I not, &c.
ní fuitim	an bfuilim	nac bfuilim
ní fuitir	an bfuilir	nac bfuilir
ní fuit ré	an bfuil ré	nac bfuil ré
ní fuitmíó	an bfuilmíó	nac bfuilmíó
ní fuit rib	an bfuil rib	nac bfuil rib
ní fuilitio	an bfuilitio	nac bfuilitio

The analytic forms are like those given above; as ní fuit ríad, nac bfuil tú, &c.

### 322. Habitual Present.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
bím (bíóim)	bímíó (bíóimíó)
bír (bíóir)	bíonn rib, bící
bíonn ré (bíó ré, bíóeann ré)	bíó (bíóíó)

Negatively, ní bím, &c. Interrogatively, an mbím, &c.

Neg. Interrog., nac mbím, &c.

Relative form bíor (bíóear).

Autonomous, bícear

### 323. Imperfect Tense (*I used to be*).

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
do bínn (do bíóinn)	do bímír (bíóimír)
„ bíceá ( „ bíóceá)	„ bíóó rib
„ bíóó ré ( „ bíóeao ré)	„ bíóír (bíóóír)

Autonomous, bící

Negatively, ní bínn

Interrogatively, an mbínn?

Neg. interrog. nac mbínn?

324.

**Past Tense.****ABSOLUTE.**

do bíor (bíðear)	do bíomar (bíðeamar)
„ bír (bíðir)	„ bíðar (bíðaðar)
„ bí ré	„ bíðar, bíðaðar

**Autonomous, bíðear**

325.

**DEPENDENT.**

raðar	raðamar
raðair	raðaðar
raib ré	raðaðar

**Autonomous, raðtar****Negative,** ní raðar, ní raðair, ní raib ré, &c.**Interrogatively (*Was I? &c.*).**

an raðar    an raðair    an raib ré    an raðamar, &amp;c.

**Neg. interrog. (*Was I not? &c.*).**

nac raðar    nac raðair    nac raib ré, &amp;c.

326.

**Future Tense.****SINGULAR.****PLURAL.**

béar, bear (béðear)	béimr, beimr (béðimr)
béir, beir (béðir)	béir ríð, béirí
béir, beir ré	béir, beir (béðir)

**Relative Form,**

bear, bear (béðear)

**Autonomous,**

béðear, beðear

**Negatively,**

ní béar

**Interrog.,**

an mbéar?

**Neg. Interrog.,**

nac mbéar?



### 327. Secondary Future or Conditional.

DO bÉinn (bÉirÉinn)	bÉimír (bÉirÉimír)
„ bÉiteá (bÉirÉiteá)	bÉaó, bÉaó (bÉirÉaó) rí
„ bÉaó, bÉaó (bÉirÉaó) ré	bÉirÉir (bÉirÉirÉir)

Autonomous,	béirÉí, bÉirÉí
Negative,	ní bÉinn
Interrog.,	an mbÉinn
Neg. interrog.,	nac mbÉinn

### 328. THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

#### Present Tense.

SO raóao	SO raómuio .
SO raóair	SO raíó ríó (raóÉaóí)
SO raíó ré	SO raóaro

The negative particle for this tense is *na*: as, *na raíó maíó aóat*. No thanks to you.

### 329. Past Tense.

SO mbÉinn	SO mbÉimír
SO mbÉiteá	SO mbÉíó ríó
SO mbÉíó ré	SO mbÉíóir

The negative particle is *na*.

#### Autonomous Form.

SO raóÉar!	may (they) be! (for once).
SO mbÉíear!	„ „ (generally).

## Verbal Noun.

beĩt, to be.

## 330. Phrases containing the Verb Noun.

Ir féroir liom (Δ)* beĩt	I can be, &c.
Ní féroir liom (Δ) beĩt	I cannot be, &c.
Tis leat (Δ) beĩt	You can be, &c.
Ní tis leat (Δ) beĩt	You cannot be, &c.
Caitfiró ré beĩt	He must be, &c.
Caitfiró mé beĩt	I must be, &c.
Ní fuláir go raib tú	You must have been, &c.
Ir corḡail go raib tú	
Níor b'féroir nó bí tú	
Ní corḡail go raib mé	I must not have been, &c.
Ní fuláir naḡ raib mé	
Ir cóir óom (Δ) beĩt	I ought to be.
Ní cóir óuit (Δ) beĩt	You ought not to be.
Buó cóir óó beĩt	He ought to have been.
Níor cóir óom (Δ) beĩt	I ought not to have been.
Buó ḡail liom (Δ) beĩt ann	I wish I were there.
Ba ḡail liom go raib mé	I wish I had been there.
ann	
Tá ré le beĩt ann	He is to be there.

## 331. The forms putim and raḡar are used—

(1) After the particles ní, not; cá, where? an (or Δ), whether? go, that; and naḡ or ná, that (conj.)...not.

---

\* This Δ is usually heard in the spoken language

(2) After the relative particle *a*, when it is preceded by a preposition, after the relative *a* when it means "what," "all that," "all which," and after the negative relative *nač*, who...not, which...not. *Cá b-fuit ré?* Where is it? *Ní fuit a fíor agam.* I don't know. *Tá fíor agam ná fuit ré ann.* I know it is not there. *Deir ré go b-fuit ré rtán.* He says that he is well. *Sin é an fear nač b-fuit ag obair.* That is the man who is not working. *Dubairt ré liom nač raib ré ann.* He told me he was not there.

**332.** We sometimes find the verb *fuit* eclipsed after the negative *ní*, not; as, *ní b-fuit ré* he is not

For the use of the Relative Form refer to pars. 554-560.

### THE ASSERTIVE VERB IS.

**333.** The position of a verb in an Irish sentence is at the very beginning; hence, when a word other than the verb is to be brought into prominence, the important word is to be placed in the most prominent position—viz., at the beginning of the sentence, under cover of an *unemphatic impersonal verb*. There is no stress on the verb so used; it merely denotes that prominence is given to some idea in the sentence other than that contained in the verb. There is a similar expedient adopted in English: thus, "He was speaking of you," and, "It

is of you he was speaking." In Irish there is a special verb for this purpose, and of this verb there are forms to be used in principal clauses and forms to be used in dependent clauses—*e.g.*:

Ir mairé an fear. I am the man.

Deirim gur ab é Seagán an fear. I say John is the man.

### 334. Forms of the Assertive Verb.

#### (a) In Principal Sentences.

**Present Tense,** ir. **Relative,** ir or ar.

**Past Tense,** ba.

[Future Simple, buò. **Relative,** buir].

**Secondary Future or Conditional,** baò.

**Subjunctive,** ab; sometimes ba.

**Subjunc. Pres.** (*with* go) go mba, gurab; (*with* ná) nárab, nára.

**Subjunc. Past.** ba mbaò, "*if it were.*"

### 335. Present Tense.

ir mé, I am; or, it is I.

ir rinn, we are, it is we.

ir tú, thou art, it is you.

ir rib, you are, it is you.

ir é, he is, it is he.

ir iad, they are, it is they.

ir í, she is, it is she.

### 336.

#### Past Tense.

ba mé,

I was, it was I.

ba tú,

thou wast, &c.

ba é, b' é, ba h-é,

he was, &c.

ba í, b' í, ba h-í

she was, &c.

ba rinn,

we were, &c.

ba rib,

you were, &c.

ba iad, b' iad, ba h-ia

they were, &c.

Uuð or þur is never used in the spoken language, and scarcely ever in writing, except when a superlative adjective or adverb occurs in a sentence, the verbs of which are in the Future Tense.

337. In the Present Tense the verb **IS** is omitted after all particles except **MĀ**, if: as, **1r mé an fear.** I am the man; **Ŋí mé an fear.** I am not the man.

338. In the Past Tense **BA** is usually omitted after particles when the word following **BA** begins with a consonant: as, **Ar máit leat an áit?** Did you like the place? **Ŋár beag an tuac é?** Was it not a small price? **BA** is not usually omitted when the following word begins with a vowel or **r**, but the **A** is elided: as, **Ŋíor v' é rin an ragar.** That was not the priest. Notice that the word immediately after **ba** or **bað**, even when **ba** or **bað** is understood, is usually aspirated when possible.

*(b) In Dependent Sentences.*

339. Present Tense.—**Ab** is used instead of **1r** after **gur**, meaning “that”; as, **meapaim gurab é rin an fear.** I think that is the man. Before a consonant **ab** is usually omitted; as, **veir ré gur mire an fear.** He says that I am the man. **Ab** is always omitted after **nac**, that...not. **Saoitim nac é rin an pi.** I think that is not the king.

340. Past Tense.—The word **ba** or **bað** becomes **v'** in dependent sentences and is usually joined to the

particle which precedes it. When the following word begins with a consonant the *v'* is usually omitted. *Meapaim guró é seo an teach.* I think that this was the house; *meapann ré nár máit le Niall beir annro.* He thinks that Niall did not like to be here. *An meapann tú gur máit an rgeut é?* Do you think that it was a good story?

**341. Conditional.**—In dependent sentences *ba* or *baó* becomes *mba*. *Saoilim go mba máit leir out teach.* I think he would like to go with you. *Deir ré nac mba máit leir.* He says that he would not like. In the spoken language the tendency is to use the past tense forms in dependent sentences; hence Irish speakers would say *gur máit* in the above sentence instead of *go mba máit*, and *nár máit* instead of *nac mba máit*.

The *Future* is never used in dependent sentences in the spoken language.

## BEIR, BEAR or CARRY.

### 342. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
beir	beuppar	beirte	bpeit

This verb is conjugated like *buait*, except in the Past, Future and Conditional.

### 343. Past Tense.

*rugar, rugair, &c.*, like *molar* (par. 264).

The prefixes *ro* and *no* were not used before this Past Tense in early usage and not generally in present-day usage.



## 344.

## Future.

βεύρῃας, βεύρῃαι, &c., like μόλῃας (par. 265).

In early modern usage there was no ϣ in this Tense, or in the Conditional. The rule was that when a short vowel in the Present became long in the Future stem no ϣ was added. This rule is still observed in the Futures ending in -όσας or -εόσας.

## Conditional.

βεύρῃαιν, &c., like μόλῃαιν (par. 266).

**Verbal Noun** βρείς, gen. βρεῖτε or βεῖτε.

**345.** This verb is of very frequent use in the idiom “βείναι ἄρ”; *lay hold on. catch, overtake*; e.g., ϣεῖσθαι οἱμ, I was caught. Ἦναι ἄρ βείναι αὐτὸν. There is no laying hold on him (or it).

## ΤΑΒΑΙΝ, GIVE or BRING.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
ταβαίν	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="font-size: 3em; vertical-align: middle;">{</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">           βεύρῃας            τιυβῃας            ταβαίρῃας         </div> </div>	<div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;"> <div style="font-size: 3em; vertical-align: middle;">{</div> <div style="display: inline-block; vertical-align: middle;">           ταβαίρτα            τυῖτα         </div> </div>	ταβαίρτε

## 346.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

- |                       |                       |                    |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|--------------------|
| 1. —                  | ταβαίμιρ,<br>(ταβῃαμ) | τυῖαμιρ            |
| 2. ταβαίν             | ταβαίῃ                |                    |
| 3. ταβῃας or τυῖας ῥέ | ταβαίῃς, (or -αςοῖς)  | τυῖαῖς (or -αςοῖς) |

**Autonomous,** ταβαίρτα, τυῖτα.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 847. Present Tense.

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
SING. 1.	(DO-) beirim	tabraim
2.	(DO-) beirir	tabrair,
3.	(DO-) beir(-eann ré	tabraann ré
PLUR. 1.	(DO-) beirimís	tabraimís
2.	(DO-) beirfeann sib	tabraann sib
3.	(DO-) beirid	tabraid

tugaim, &c. (like molaim), may be used in both constructions.

Autonomous, (DO-)beirtear, tabartear or tugtar.

348. By the "Dependent Form" of the Verb we mean that form which is used after the following Particles, viz., ní, not; an, whether; naó, whether... not; or who, which or that...not; go, that; cá, where; muna, unless; dá, if; and the relative when governed by a preposition.

## 849. Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(DO-)beirinn	tabrainn
(DO-)beirteá	&c., like d'fuaḡrainn
&c., like buaítinn (262)	(805)

Or, tugainn, tugta, &c., for both *absolute* and *dependent* constructions.

Autonomous, beirtí, tabartaí, tugtaí.

### Past Tense.

**350.** The Past Tense has only one form: *εἶπα*, *εἶπας*, &c., like *ἔμελλας* (264). **Auton.** *εἶπα*.

In early usage this Past Tense did not take *οο* or *πο*, as *εἶπε ο-εἶπα*, "that I gave." In present-day usage this peculiarity is sometimes adhered to and sometimes not.

**351.**

### Future Tense.

#### ABSOLUTE.

(οο-) *βουρῶ*

&c.,

like *μελλῶ* (285)

#### DEPENDENT.

*τιυβῶ, τιοβῶ*

*τιυβῶις, τιοβῶις*

*τιυβῶις ῥε*

*ταῦρα*, &c., may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *βουρῶ*      *ταῦρα*

**352.**

### Conditional.

(οο-) *βουρῶν*

&c.,

like *μελλῶν* (266)

*τιυβῶν, τιοβῶν*

*τιυβῶν, τιοβῶν*

&c.

*ταῦρα*, &c., may be used in both constructions.

**Autonomous,** *βουρῶν, ταῦρα*.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

This Mood occurs only in dependent construction.

**353. Present**—*εἶπῶ, εἶπῶις, εἶπῶις ῥε*, &c., or  
*εἶπῶν, εἶπῶν, &c.*

**354. Past**—*εἶπῶν, &c.*, like *μελλῶν* (268).

### Verbal Noun.

*εἶπας*, gen. *εἶπας*.

## 355.                    ΔΒΑΙΝ, SAY.

**Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
Δβαιν	{ δευρραο Δβρόδαο	ράιότε	ράο

## 356.                    IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |             |                     |
|-------------|---------------------|
| 1. —        | Δβραιμίρ (Δβραμ)    |
| 2. Δβαιν    | Δβραιό              |
| 3. Δβραό ρέ | Δβραιοίρ, Δβραοδοίρ |

## 357.                    Present Tense.

**ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

- |                          |                   |
|--------------------------|-------------------|
| 1. (Δ)δειμ               | Δβραιμ            |
| 2. (Δ)δειν               | Δβραι             |
| 3. (Δ)δειν or δεψεανν ρέ | Δβρανν ρέ (Δβαιρ) |
| 1. (Δ)δειμίο             | Δβραιμίο          |
| 2. (Δ)δειτί              | Δβρανν ριό        |
| 3. (Δ)δειο               | Δβραιο            |

**Autonomous,** (Δ)δειρταρ      Δβαιρταρ

The initial Δ of Δδειμ, &c., is now usually dropped. The same remark holds for the other tenses. The ο of δειμ, &c., is not usually aspirated by a foregoing particle. The absolute and dependent constructions are sometimes confused in spoken usage.

## 358.                    Imperfect Tense.

**ABSOLUTE.****DEPENDENT.**

- |                |          |
|----------------|----------|
| 1. Δδεινν      | Δβραινν  |
| 2. Δδειρτα     | Δβαιρτά  |
| 3. Δδειρεαό ρέ | Δβραό ρέ |
| &c.            | &c.      |

**Autonomous,** Δδειρτι

Δβαιρταο

359.

**Past Tense.**

αουῆναρ, αουῆναρτ	ουῆναρ, ουῆναρτ
αουῆναιρ	ουῆναιρ
αουῆναρτ ρε	ουῆναρτ ρε
αουῆναμαρ	ουῆναμαρ
αουῆναῖδαρ	ουῆναῖδαρ
αουῆναῖδαρ	ουῆναῖδαρ

**Autonomous, (α)ουῆναῖ or (α)ουῆναρτ**

360.

**Future Tense.**

ουερραῖ	αβροῖαῖ
ουερραιρ	αβροῖαιρ
ουερραιῖ ρε	αβροῖαιῖ ρε

**Autonomous, ουερραιρ αβροῖαιρ**

In the spoken language the absolute and dependent forms are often confused.

361.

**Conditional.**

ουερραινν	αβροῖαινν
ουερραι	αβροῖαι
ουερραιῖ ρε	αβροῖαιῖ ρε

**Autonomous, ουερραι αβροῖαι**

In spoken language the two constructions are often confused.

362.

**SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.**

Present,	αβραιῖ,	αβραιρ,	αβραιῖ ρε, &c.
Past,	αβραινν,	αβραιῖα,	αβραιῖ ρε, &c.

363.

**Participles.**

μάρτε, ion-μάρτε, το-μάρτε, πο-μάρτε.

**Verbal Noun.**

μάτ or μάδα, gen. sing. and nom. plur. μάρτε

## 𐌱𐌰𐌿, TAKE.

### 364. Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
𐌱𐌰𐌿	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰 \\ 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰 \end{array} \right.$	𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌶𐌰	𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

### 365. Future.

𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰, 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰, 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰 𐌱𐌰, &c.

### 366. Conditional.

𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰, 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌶𐌰, 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰 𐌱𐌰, &c.

367. In the spoken language the Future is often made 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰, &c., and the Conditional, 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰, as in regular verbs.

### Verbal Noun.

𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶 or 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶, gen. sing. and Nom. plural 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶𐌰.

## 𐌱𐌰𐌶, GET, FIND.

### 368. Principal Parts.

Imperative	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
𐌱𐌰𐌶	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶 \\ 𐌱𐌰𐌿𐌰𐌶 \end{array} \right.$	𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌶𐌰	𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌰𐌶

### 369. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

1. —	𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌰𐌶𐌰
2. 𐌱𐌰𐌶	𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌰𐌶
3. 𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌰𐌶 𐌱𐌰	𐌱𐌰𐌶𐌰𐌶𐌰



## INDICATIVE MOOD.

370

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ἰο-) ζειβιm	բաջaim
„ ζειβip	բաջaip
„ ζειβεann բé, ζειb բé	բաջann բé
„ ζειbmio	բաջaimio
„ ζειβεann րib	բաջann րib
„ ζειbio	բաջaio

**Autonomous, (ἰο-) ζειbteap** բաջtap

In spoken usage բաջaim, &c., is used in both dependent and absolute constructions.

In the Auton. բաջtap, բաջteap and բactap are used.

371.

## Imperfect Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
(ἰο-) ζειbinn	բաջainn
„ ζειbtea	բաջta
&c.	&c.

**Autonomous, ζειbci, բաջtaoi, բաջci.**

Spoken usage, Absolute, ζειbinn or բաջainn, &c.

372.

## Past Tense.

This Tense has only one form for both absolute and dependent constructions. The prefixes ἰο and ἡο are not used with it.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. բարap	բարamap
2. բարaip	բարaɔap
3. բար բé	բարaɔap

**Autonomous, բրit, բարitap or բարaɔ.**

In spoken usage բրit often becomes բրiteaɔ.

373.

## Future Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                  |                      |
|------------------|----------------------|
| 1. ʒeobaŋ, ʒeabŋ | ʋpuiʒeab or ʋpaiʒeab |
| 2. ʒeobaŋ, &c.   | ʋpuiʒŋ &c.           |
| 3. ʒeobaŋ rē     | ʋpuiʒŋ rē            |
| 1. ʒeobaŋmŋ      | ʋpuiʒimŋ             |
| 2. ʒeobaŋ rŋ     | ʋpuiʒŋ rŋ            |
| 3. ʒeobaŋ        | ʋpuiʒŋ               |

Autonomous,	{ ʒeobŋ	{ puiʒteab
	{ ʒeabŋ	{ paiʒteab

374.

## Conditional.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

- |                   |                    |
|-------------------|--------------------|
| ʒeobaŋn or ʒeabŋn | ʋpuiʒŋn or ʋpaiʒŋn |
| ʒeobŋ, &c.        | ʋpuiʒteā, &c.      |
| ʒeobaŋ rē         | ʋpuiʒeab rē        |
| ʒeobaŋmŋ          | ʋpuiʒimŋ           |
| ʒeobaŋ rŋ         | ʋpuiʒeab rŋ        |
| ʒeobaŋŋ           | ʋpuiʒŋŋ            |

Autonomous,	{ ʒeobŋ	{ puiʒŋ
	{ ʒeabŋ	{ paiʒŋ

375.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD

Present, paʒab, paʒaŋ, paʒaŋ rē, &amp;c.

Past, paʒaŋn, paʒŋ, paʒab rē, &amp;c.

376.

## Participle.

paʒŋ, paiʒte or paŋŋ.

The derivative participles of this verb are usually formed from the genitive of the verbal noun.

ŋn-paʒāŋ, rŋ-paʒāŋ, ŋŋ-paʒāŋ.

377.            **deun, DO, MAKE.****Principal Parts.**

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
deun	deunfao	deunta	deunam

378.            **IMPERATIVE MOOD.**

1. —	deunaimir
2. deun	deunaid
3. deunad ré	deunaidir

**Autonomous, deuntar.****INDICATIVE MOOD.**379.            **Present Tense.**

	ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. (do-)	gním (gníom)	deunaim
2. „	gnír &c.	deunair
3. „	gní ré or gníonn ré	deunann ré
1. „	gnímío	deunaimío
2. „	gníci	deunann ríó
3. „	gníó	deunaid

Relative, gníor, gníóear

**Autonomous, gnítear            deuntar**

In present-day usage deunaim, &c., are very frequently used in the absolute construction.

330.

**Imperfect Tense.****ABSOLUTE.**

do-ghínn, ghíóinn

„ ghíteá, &amp;c.

„ ghíod ré

„ ghímí

„ ghíod rí

„ ghíodí

**DEPENDENT.**

deunáinn

deunta

deunad ré

deunaimí

deunad rí

deunaidí

**Autonomous, do-ghíctí**

deuntaoi

381.

**Past Tense.**

do-riinneap

„ rinneap

„ rinne ré

„ rinneamar

„ rinneadap

„ rinneadap

deápnar

deápnair

deápnar ré

deápnamar

deápnadap

deápnadap

**Autonomous, do-rinnead**

deápnad

In Munster dialect *deineap*, *deinir*, *dein ré*, *deineamar*, *deineadap*, and *deineadap* are used as the Past Tense in both absolute and dependent constructions.

382.

**Future Tense.****ABSOLUTE AND DEPENDENT.**

deunpao

deunpáir

deunpáir ré

deunpaimí

deunpáir rí

deunpáir

**Autonomous, deunpáir**

383.

**Conditional.**

deunpáinn

deunpá

deunpá ré

deunpaimí

deunpá rí

deunpáirí

**Autonomous, deunpáir**

## 384. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

## Present.

deunad deunair deunairé deunamadair, &c.

## Past.

deunainn deunta deunad ré deunamadair, &c.

## Participles.

deunta ion-deunta ro-deunta do-deunta

## Verbal Noun.

deunam (deunad) gen. deunta

## 385. feic, SEE.

## Principal Parts.

Imperative.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
feic	{ cifead feicfead	feicte	feicint

## 386. IMPERATIVE MOOD.

- |               |                    |
|---------------|--------------------|
| 1. —          | feicimír (feiceam) |
| 2. feic       | feicir             |
| 3. feicead ré | feicirís           |

387. The imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plural are hardly ever found; for we rarely command or ask a person to "see" anything, except in the sense of "look at" it. In Irish a distinct verb is always used in the sense of "look at," such as feuc, veaic, bheathnais, &c. The verb feuc must not be confounded with feic; it is a distinct verb, and has a complete and regular conjugation.

388. In early modern Irish *pac* was the stem used in the imperative and in the dependent construction throughout the entire verb.

389.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.	DEPENDENT.
1. <b>ṽo-ćīm</b> (ćīṽīm)	<b>feicīm</b>
2. <b>ṽo-ćīṛ</b> , &c.	<b>feicīṛ</b>
3. <b>ṽo-ćī ré</b> , ćionn <b>re</b>	<b>feiceann ré</b>
1. <b>ṽo-ćīmīṽ</b>	<b>feicīmīṽ</b>
2. <b>ṽo-ćīťī</b>	<b>feiceann řīṽ</b>
3. <b>ṽo-ćīṽ</b>	<b>feicīṽ</b>
Autonomous, { <b>ṽo-ćītear</b>	<b>feictear</b>
{ <b>ṽo-ćītear</b>	

390. The prefix **ṽo-**, now usually dropped, is an altered form of the old prefix **at**—*e.g.*, **atćīm**. This form survives in the spoken language only in the Ulster form, **'ćīm** or **ćīṽīm**, &c.

391.

## Imperfect Tense.

<b>ṽo-ćīnn</b> , ćīṽīnn	<b>feicīnn</b>
<b>ṽo-ćīteá</b> , &c.	<b>feicteá</b>
<b>ṽo-ćīṽṽ ré</b>	<b>feiceaṽṽ ré</b>
<b>ṽo-ćīmīṛ</b>	<b>feicīmīṛ</b>
<b>ṽo-ćīṽṽ řīṽ</b>	<b>feiceaṽṽ řīṽ</b>
<b>ṽo-ćīṽīṛ</b>	<b>feicīṽīṛ</b>

In spoken language **feicīnn**, &c., is used in both Absolute and Dependent constructions.

Ulster usage, **ćīṽeann**, **ćīṽteá**, &c.



392.

## Past Tense.

## ABSOLUTE.

## DEPENDENT.

1.	{ connac connacair	(connaircar)	{ facair faca	{ feacair feaca
2.	connacair	(connaircair)	facair	feacair
3.	connaic ré	(connairc ré)	faca ré	feaca ré
1.	connacamar	[connaircamar]	facamar	feacamar
2.	connacabair	[connaircabair]	facabair	feacabair
3.	connacadar	[connaircadair]	facadar	feacadair

**Autonomous,** connacar      facair or factair

The older spelling was *atconnac* and *atconnairc*, &c. The *τ* is still preserved in the Ulster dialect: *ṭanaic me*, &c., I saw.

393.

## Future Tense.

(to-)cifead,	cíófead,	feicfead,
(to-)cífir,	cíófir,	feicfir,
&c.		&c.

**Autonomous,** cifeair      feicfeair

394.

## Conditional.

(to-)cífinn,	cíófinn,	feicfinn,
&c.		&c.

In the Future and Conditional *feicfead*, &c., and *feicfinn*, &c., can be used in both constructions.

395.

## SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

**Present,** feicead, feicir, feició ré, &c.

**Past,** feicinn, feicteá, feicead ré, &c.

**Participle,** feicte.

396.

**Verbal Noun.**

feicint, feicint, gen. feicreana.

From the genitive of the verbal noun the compound participles are formed: viz., in-feicreana, ro-feicreana, oo-feicreana.

397.

**CLÓIS or CLUIN, HEAR.**

These two verbs are quite regular except in the Past Tense.

In old writings the particle *at* or *oo-* is found prefixed to all the tenses in the absolute construction, but this particle is now dropped.

398.

**Past Tense.**

cuatar, cuata

cualamar

cuatair

cuataðar

cuata ré

cuataðar

Autonomous, cuataar

**Verbal Nouns.**

clor or clóirint (or more modern cluinint or clóirtin).

**ṬAR, COME.**

399.

**IMPERATIVE.**

SING. 1. —

PLUR. ṭisimír (ṭiseam)

2. ṭar

ṭisib

3. ṭisead (ṭasead) ré

ṭisoir

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 400. Present Tense.

1. $\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\mu$	$\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\mu\iota\tau$
2. $\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\eta$	$\tau\iota\varsigma\tau\acute{\iota}$
3. $\tau\iota\varsigma\ \rho\acute{\epsilon}$	$\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\omicron$

Relative (wanting).

Autonomous,  $\tau\iota\varsigma\tau\epsilon\alpha\eta$ .

The Present Tense has also the forms  $\tau\alpha\varsigma\alpha\iota\mu$  or  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\varsigma\alpha\iota\mu$  inflected regularly.

## 401. Imperfect Tense.

$\tau\iota\varsigma\iota\eta\eta$ ,  $\tau\alpha\varsigma\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ , or  $\tau\epsilon\alpha\varsigma\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ , regularly.

## 402. Past Tense.

$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\eta$ , $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$	$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\mu\alpha\eta$
$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\iota\eta$	$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\beta\alpha\eta$
$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\eta\varsigma\ \rho\acute{\epsilon}$	$\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\upsilon\alpha\eta$

403. Autonomous,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\eta$ .

The  $\eta\varsigma$  in this Tense is not sounded like  $\eta\varsigma$  in *long*, a *ship*, but with a helping vowel between them—*e.g.*, 2nd pers. sing.—is pronounced as if written  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\gamma\alpha\iota\eta$ ; but in Munster the  $\varsigma$  is silent except in the 3rd pers. sing.—*e.g.*,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\gamma\alpha\eta$  is pronounced *haw-nuss*.

404. Future Tense,  $\tau\iota\omicron\epsilon\phi\alpha\upsilon$ , &c., inflected regularly; also spelled  $\tau\iota\omicron\epsilon\phi\alpha\upsilon$ , &c.

Relative,  $\tau\iota\omicron\epsilon\phi\alpha\eta$ Conditional,  $\tau\iota\omicron\epsilon\phi\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ , &c., inflected regularly.

# 405. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *τιγεαθ, ταγαθ, or τεαγαθ*, inflected regularly.

Past, *τιγινη, ταγανη, or τεαγανη*, inflected regularly.

406. Verbal Noun, *τεαατ* (or *τιοθαατ, τιθαατ*)

Participle, *τεαγτα or ταγτα*.

# 407. *τείγ, GO.*

N.B.—The present stem is also spelled *τείθ*, but *τείγ* is preferable, as it better represents the older form, *τιαγ* or *τείγ*.

# 408. IMPERATIVE.

- |                      |                           |
|----------------------|---------------------------|
| 1. —                 | <i>τείγιμίρ (τείγεαμ)</i> |
| 2. <i>τείγ</i>       | <i>τείγιθ</i>             |
| 3. <i>τείγεαθ ré</i> | <i>τείγιθίρ</i>           |

409. In the Imperative 2nd sing. and 2nd plur. other verbs are now usually substituted, such as *γαθ, ιμτίγ, τέιμιγ*. The use of *τέιμιγ*, plur. *τέιμιγιθ*, seems to be confined to these two forms; *ιμτίγ* has a full, regular conjugation.

# INDICATIVE MOOD.

## 410. Present.

- |                                |                    |
|--------------------------------|--------------------|
| 1. <i>τείγim (τείθim)</i>      | 1. <i>τείγimίθ</i> |
| 2. <i>τείγιρ &amp;c.</i>       | 2. <i>τείγτί</i>   |
| 3. <i>τείγ ré, τείγεαnn ré</i> | 3. <i>τείγιθ</i>   |

Autonomous, *τείγτεαρ*

# Imperfect Tense.

téiginn (or téiröinn), &c., regularly.

## 411. Past Tense.

### ABSOLUTE.

1. éuaðar

2. éuaðair

3. éuaið ré

1. éuaðamar

2. éuaðaðar

3. éuaðaðar

### DEPENDENT.

ueaçar

ueaçaip

ueaçaioð ré

ueaçamar

ueaçaðar

ueaçaðar

**Autonomous,** éuaðçar

ueaçar

In Munster éuaðar, &c., is used in the dependent construction, as níor éuaið ré, he did not go. Ueaçar, &c., is also used in Munster.

## 412. Future.

### SINGULAR.

1. raçao, raçao

2. raçaip, raçaip

3. raçaioð ré, raçaioð ré

### PLURAL.

raçamaoio, raçamaoio

raçaioð rið, raçaioð rið

raçaio, raçaio

**Relative,** raçar, raçar.

**Autonomous,** raçtar, raçtar.

## 413. Conditional.

raçainn or raçainn, &c., regularly.

The Future and Conditional are sometimes spelled raçao, &c., and raçainn, &c.

## 414. SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

Present, *τείγεαο, τείγιη, τείγιὸ ρέ, &c.*

Past, *τείγιην, τείγτεά, τείγεαὸ ρέ, &c.*

## 415. Verbal Noun.

*ουτ, gen. ουτα (sometimes ουλτα).*

## Participle of Necessity.

*ουλτα (as, ní ουλτα ὁό, he ought not to go).*

## Derivative Participles.

*ιον-ουτα, ρο-ουτα, ὀο-ουτα.*

416. *ιτ, EAT.*

This verb is regular except in the Future and Conditional.

## Principal Parts.

Imper.	Future.	Participle.	Verbal Noun.
<i>ιτ</i>	<i>ιοραο</i>	<i>ιττε</i>	<i>ιτε</i>

## 417. Future Tense.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. *ιοραο (ιορραο)*

*ιοραμαοιρ*

2. *ιοραιη, &c.*

*ιοραιὸ ριθ*

3. *ιοραιὸ ρέ*

*ιοραιρ*

Relative, *ιοραη (ιορραη).*

Autonomous, *ιορταη.*

## 418. Conditional.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

1. *ιοραιην (ιορραιην)*

*ιοραμαοιρ*

2. *ιορταά, &c.*

*ιοραὸ ριθ*

3. *ιοραὸ ρέ*

*ιοραιοιρ*



419. As well as the regular Past Tense, ὀΐτεα, &c., there is another Past Tense, viz., ὀυαῶα, in use.

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
1. ὀυαῶα	ὀυαῶαμα
2. ὀυαῶαι	ὀυαῶαδα
3. ὀυαῶε	ὀυαῶατα

### ῥίγιμ, I REACH.

420. This verb is nearly obsolete, its place being taken by the regular verbs ῥοιῖμ and ῥοιρῖμ

Its Past Tense is inflected like ταναῖ.

1. ῥανῖα, ῥαναῖ	ῥανῖαμα
2. ῥανῖαι	ῥανῖαδα
3. ῥανῖε	ῥανῖατα

### 421. Verbal Noun.

ῥοῖταιμ or ῥιαῖταιμ.

ῥίγιμ has a special usage in the phrase ῥίγιμ αἰεα, "*I need*," (whence, ῥιαῖταιμ, need, necessity: ῥιαῖταιμ, necessary: from the verbal noun.)

### μαρῶαμ or μαρῶιγιμ, I KILL.

422. This verb is quite regular except in Future and Conditional.

**Future**, μαρῶα, μαρῶαα, μαρῶαα, μαρῶαα, μαρῶαα or μαρῶααα (with usual terminations).

**Conditional**, μαρῶαμ, μαρῶαμ, μαρῶαμ, μαρῶαμ, μαρῶαμ or μαρῶαμ, &c., &c.

### Verbal Noun.

μαρῶα or μαρῶαα, to kill or killing.

## SOME DEFECTIVE VERBS.

423. **AR**, quoth, say or said. This verb is used only when the exact words of the speaker are given. (It corresponds exactly with the Latin "*inquit*." ) It is frequently written **arra** or **arr**, as **arra mire**, said I. When the definite article immediately follows this latter form the **r** is often joined to the article, as, **arr an fear** or **ar ran fear**, says the man. "**Cia tú féin?**" **ar reiréan**. "Who are you?" said he.

When the exact words of the speaker are not given translate "says" by **deir**, and "said" by **duairt**. When the word "*that*" is understood after the English verb "*say*" **go** (or **nac** if "*not*" follows) *must be expressed in Irish.*

424. **ṌAR**, It seems or it seemed. This verb is always followed by the preposition **le**: as, **Ṍar liom**, it seems to me, methinks; or, it seemed to me, methought. **Ṍar leat**. It seems to you. **Ṍar leis an bfean**. It seemed to the man.

425. **peṌAR**, I know, I knew. This verb is nearly always used negatively or interrogatively, and although really a past tense has a present meaning as well as a

past. *ní fead̃ar.* I do, or did, not know. *ní fead̃air ré.* He does not know, or he did not know.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

- |                          |                       |
|--------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. <i>fead̃ar</i>        | 1. <i>fead̃aramar</i> |
| 2. <i>fead̃air (-ir)</i> | 2. <i>fead̃ad̃ar</i>  |
| 3. <i>fead̃air ré</i>    | 3. <i>fead̃ad̃ar</i>  |

N.B.—The forms just given are those used in the spoken language, the literary forms are: *fead̃ar*, *fead̃air tú*, *fead̃air ré*, *fead̃amar*, *fead̃ad̃ar*, and *fead̃ad̃ar*.

426. *ṡárl̃a*, There came to pass, it happened or happened to be. It is also used to express the meeting of one person with another.

427. *ṡ'f̃ób̃air̃* or *b̃a ṡ'ób̃air̃*, "It all but happened." *E.g.*, *ṡ'f̃ób̃air̃ ṡam tuitim*, It all but happened to me to fall, I had like to fall, I had well nigh fallen. The same meaning is expressed by *ṡ'f̃ób̃air̃ go ṡuitrim̃*.

428. *feud̃aim*, I can, is regular in all its tenses, but it has no imperative mood.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

---

### The Adverb.

429. There are not many simple adverbs in Irish, the greater number of adverbs being made up of two or more words. Almost every Irish adjective may be-

come an adverb by having the particle “**ḡO**” prefixed to it: as, **maĩt**, good; **ḡo maĩt**, well; **uĩat**, humble; **ḡo n-uĩat**, humbly.

**430.** This **ḡo** is really the preposition **ḡo\*** with its meaning of “with.” (Do not confound this word with **ḡo** meaning “to,” they are two distinct prepositions). Of course this particle has now lost its original meaning in the case of most adverbs.

**431.** Adverbs may be compared; their comparative and superlative degrees are, however, those of the adjectives from which they are derived; the particle **ḡo** is not used before the comparative or superlative.

**432.** It may be well to remark here that when an adjective begins with a vowel **ḡo** prefixes **n**, as **ḡo n-annam**, seldom.

**433.** The following list may now be regarded as simple adverbs although many of them are disguised compounds.

<b>amac</b>	out (used <i>only</i> after a verb of motion).
<b>amuĩḡ, amuĩc</b>	outside, out; never used after a verb of motion. He is out, <b>taĩ ré amuĩḡ</b> . He is standing outside the door, <b>taĩ ré 'na řeapam taob amuĩḡ oe 'n 'oorap</b> .

---

\* This preposition is now used only in a few phrases; as **mĩle ḡo leĩt**, a mile and (with) a half: **řlat ḡo leĩt**, a yard and a half: **bliaobam ḡo leĩt ó řein**, a year and a half ago.

ám, amác, } however.  
áméac,

amám, alone, only.

amát, as, like.

amátar, thus.

anoct, to-night.

anor, now.

apér, last-night.

apír(τ). again.

cá? where?

ceana, already, previously.

conur? cionnur? how?

com, com, as (*see par.* 154).

fearoa, henceforth, at once.

leir, } also.  
pseirín,

for, yet.

i muða, amú, astray (mis-  
taken).

inóe (ané), yesterday.

inóiu (anóiu), to-day.

i mbárac (amárac), to-  
morrow.

irceac, in (*motion only*).

ircíg, inside (*rest*).

go h-annam, seldom.

go fóill, yet, awhile.

ní (níor), } not.  
éa (éar), (*Ulster*),

nuair, when.

caéain? } when?  
caíoin?

mar, as, like.

mar rin, thus.

fiú, *even*; as, níor labair ré fiú don focal amám.  
*He did not speak even one word.* San fiú na h-anála  
do éarpainn. *Without even taking breath.* Fiú is  
really a noun, and is followed by the genitive case,  
whenever the definite article comes between it and  
the noun; otherwise it is followed by a nomina-  
tive case.

434. It may be useful to remark here that the words  
inóiu, to-day; inóe, yesterday; i mbárac, to-morrow;  
apér, last night; anoct, to-night; can be used only  
as adverbs. *He came to-day.* Éainn ré inóiu. *He*

went away yesterday. *O' imtíḡ ré inóé.* When the English words are nouns, we must use *an lá* (or *an oiróce*) before *inóiu*, *inóé*, *apéir*, etc. *Yesterday was fine.* *Bí an lá inóé bpeáḡ.* To-morrow will be wet. *Veró an lá i mbápas fliué.* Last night was cold. *Bí an oiróce apéir fuar.*

### 435. Interrogative Words.

when? *cátain?* *cé an uair?* which (*adj.*)? *cé an...?*  
*cé an t-am?*

where? *cá?* *cé an áit?* what? *cá?* *cpeuo?*  
*conao?* *ceuo?*

how? *conur* (*cionnur*)? *cé* whither? *cá?*  
*an áaoi?* *ḡo dé mar?*

why? *cá?* *'na áaoib?* *cá?* whence? *cá?* *ar?* *cá'r*  
*cuige?* *cá?* *fát?* *cé* *ab ar?*  
*an fá?*

how far? } *cé an fá?* how much? } *cé meuo?*

how long? } *an fá?* how many? } *an mó?*

which (*pron.*)? *cioca?* *cé?* who? *cé?* *cia?* *cé h-é* (*i, lá?*)?

### Up and Down.

436. { *ruar*, upwards, motion upwards from the place where the speaker is.  
 Up. { *anóir*, upwards, motion up from below to the place where the speaker is.  
 { *tuar* (also spelled *fuar*), up, rest above the place where the speaker is.  
 { *anóir* (*abur*),\* up, rest where the speaker is.

\* This form is used in Ulster and North Connaught, but generally this word is used only for rest on this side of a room, river, &c., or here, where we are.



Down. { **ríor**, downwards, motion **down** from where the speaker is.  
**anuap**, downwards, motion **down** from above to where the speaker is.  
**éíor** (**ríor**), down, below, **rest below** the place where the speaker is.  
**anuap** (**aduap**), \* **down**, **rest** where the speaker is.

**437.** The following examples will fully illustrate the use of the words for “up” and “down” :—

**A.**  
**A** says to **B**, I'll throw it **down**, **Caítíró mé ríor é.**  
 Is it **down** yet? **Úfuil ré éíor fóir?**  
 Throw it **up**, **Caít aníor é.**  
 It is **up** now, **Tá ré aníor anoir.**  
**B** says to **A**, I'll throw it **up**, **Caítíró mé ruap é.**  
 Is it **up** yet? **Úfuil ré tuap fóir?**  
 Throw it **down**, **Caít anuap é.**  
 It is **down** now. **Tá ré anuap anoir.**  
**B.**

**N.B.**—He is **up** (i.e., he is not in bed), **Tá ré 'na fuíre.**  
 We are up, **Tá rinn 'nár fuíre**

\* See foot-note at end of page 160.

438.

Rest	Motion from the speaker	Motion towards the speaker	Prepositional use, this side of, etc.
1 ðfur, ðfur, this side	anonn	anall	lartður ve, taob ðfur ve
ðall, the other side, yonder	fall	anall	lartall ve, taob ðall ve
amuið (amuið), outside	amac	amac	learmuið, taob amuið ve
irtis, inside	irteac	irteac	lairtis, taob irtis ve

## Over.

439. The following sentences will exemplify the translation of the word "over":—

A. \_\_\_\_\_ B.

A says to B, I'll throw it over to      Caitríò mé anonn  
you,      éugac é.

„ Is it over yet?      Òpuil ré ðall fòr?

„ Throw it over to me,      Cait anall éugam é.

„ It is over now,      Tá ré abur anoir.

He went over the wall.      Cuairt ré tap an mballa.

He went over to Scot-      Cuairt ré anonn go  
land.      n-Albain.

He came over from      Táinig ré anall ó  
Scotland.      Albain.

### North, South, East, West.

The root *oir* means *front*: *iar* means *back*.

440. The ancients faced the rising sun in naming the points of the compass; hence *ċoir*, east; *ċiar*, west; *ċuair*, north; *ċear*, south.

441.

Rest	Motion from the speaker towards the	Motion towards the speaker from the	Prepositional use, east of, west of, north of, south of,
<i>ċoir</i> , east	<i>roir</i>	<i>anoir</i>	{ * <i>larroir</i> ve; <i>an an</i> <i>taob ċoir</i> ve; <i>uia† ċoir</i> ve
<i>ċiar</i> , west	<i>riar</i>	<i>aniar</i>	{ * <i>lairriar</i> ve; <i>an an</i> <i>taob ċiar</i> ve; <i>uia ċiar</i> ve
<i>ċuair</i> , north	<i>ó ċuair</i>	<i>avtuair</i>	{ * <i>lartuair</i> ve; <i>an an</i> <i>taob ċuair</i> ve; <i>uia ċuair</i> ve
<i>ċear</i> , south	<i>ó ċear</i>	<i>anvear</i>	{ * <i>lairvear</i> ve; <i>an an</i> <i>taob ċear</i> ve; <i>uia ċear</i> ve

442. The noun "north," etc., is *an taob ċuair*, *an taob ċear*, etc., or *tuairceart*, *veirceart*, *iarċar*, and *oirċear*. These latter words are obsolescent.

443.

The North wind,	<i>an ġaot avtuair</i>	N.W. wind, <i>ġaot aniar avtuair</i>
" South "	" "	S.E. wind, <i>ġaot anoir anvear</i>
" East "	" "	etc., etc.
" West "	" "	Notice the change of position in Irish.

444. With reference to a house, *riar* is *inwards*; *roir* is *outwards*.

\* *lear* or *lar* may be used. † Probably a corruption of *taob*.

## 445. Compound or Phrase Adverbs.

1 ḡcéin, far off ( <i>space</i> ).	Δρ Δον ḡον,	} at all.
1 ḡpado, far off ( <i>space and time</i> ).	1 n-Δον ḡον,	
Δρ Δρ, back.	Δρ bit,	
	ḡον Δρ bit,	
Δρ ḡcút, backwards.	ḡον leir rin, moreover	
Δρ ḡtúr, } at first, or in	Δρ Δον cúma, } at any	
Δρ ḡtúr, } the beginning.	Δρ cúma Δρ bit, } rate.	
Δnnro, here.	pé rḡeal é, } however,	
Δnn ran (rain, rin), there,	pé ruo é, } at any rate.	
then.	1 n-Δirḡe, gratis.	
ḡo ríor, } always.	1 ḡtairḡe, in safe keeping	
1 ḡcomnuirde, }	1 n-ΔirḡeΔr, in vain.	
ḡoirḡe, ever ( <i>future</i> ).	tuille eile, } moreover,	
ruam, ever ( <i>past</i> ).	tuille rór, } besides.	
ḡo roo, for ever.	1 leir, apart, aside.	
ḡo brát(Δc), for ever.	cao Δr? } whence?	
pé (or fá) ḡó, twice.	ca n-Δr? }	
pé (or fá) ḡrí, thrice.	cé meuo? } how much?	
pé (or fá) ḡeac, by turns.	ca meuo? } how many?	
1 látar, present.	Δn mó? }	
Δρ látar, absent.	ro lo, by day.	
ro látar, presently, just now.	ir' oirḡe, } by night.	
beas nac, }	o' oirḡe, }	
nac mór, } almost.	ó céile, }	
ḡeall le, }	ó n-Δ céile, } asunder.	
ḡo leir, }	1 n-éinḡeact, together.	
ḡo n-ionmlán, } entirely.	pé tuairim, conjecturally.	

eadon (*written .a.*),

ó éianaiḃ,

ó éianṭaiḃ,

ʒo leor,

ṽ'ár noóig (ṽóic),

ṽo ʒeit,

í ʒcéadóir,

lom-láitṛeac,

láitṛeac bonn,

ar an ṽtoirṭ,

ar uairiḃ,

uairṛeannṭa,

anoir 7 arír,

ʒo h-áirigṭe,

ʒo ronṛáḃac,

ʒo mórmór,

ʒo h-uirmór,

ar ball,

ṽála an rʒéilor ṽálṭa riúṽ,

í n-áirṽe,

coranáirṽe,

ʒo ṽeimín or ʒo ṽearḃṭa,

ʒo ṽeimín ir ʒo ṽearḃṭa,

ambriacar 'r ambara,

ṽá riúḃ,

mar an ʒcéadóna,

ó ʒoin í leit,

ó ʒoin amaḃ,

ar éigín,

namely.

awhile ago.

ages ago.

enough.

sure, surely.

immediately, instantly.

sometimes.

especially.

by and bye, after awhile.

by the bye.

on high.

at full gallop.

indeed.

really and truly.

really, in fact.

likewise, in like manner.

from that time to this.

from that time out.

hardly, with difficulty,  
perforce.

an éuró ip mó óe, }	at most.
ar (a) iomaó,	
an éuró ip luḡa óe, }	at least.
ar a laḡaó (laḡeaó), }	
ar a rón ran (ip uile),	notwithstanding (all that).
com fáda 'r (use le before noun) }	whilst, as long as.
an fáio (rel. form of verb)	
o' aon ḡnó,	purposely.
com maié aḡur óá,	just as if.
le h-éirḡe an lae,	at dawn.
ḡan coinne le, }	unexpectedly.
ḡan rúil le, }	
óe ḡnát (ḡnátac),	usually.
mar atá, mar atáio,	namely, viz., i.e.
ór ipiol,	secretly, lowly.
ór áro,	aloud, openly.
ar maidin,	in the morning.
ra trátónóna, }	in the evening.
um trátónóna, }	
ar maidin inóiu,	this morning.
ar maidin i mbárac,	to-morrow morning.
ra trátónóna inóiu,	this evening.
acpuḡaó inóe,	on the day before yesterday
acpuḡaó i mbárac,	on the day after to-
anoirítear, umánoirítear,	
lá ar n-a bárac,	morrow.
i mbliadóna,	on the following day.
anupaió,	(during) this year.
acpuḡaó anupaió,	(during) last year.
	(during) the year before last



**446.** The phrases which have just been given about morning, evening, &c., are strictly adverbial, and cannot be used as nouns.

**447.**

### Adverbs.

### Nouns.

ἮΔ Δομναίς, on Sunday	Δομναέ, m., Sunday
ἮΔ Λυαίν, on Monday	Λυαν, m., Monday
ἮΔ Μάϊπ, on Tuesday	Μάϊπ, f., Tuesday
ἮΔ Κυτταοίν', on Wednesday	Κυτταοίν, f., Wednesday
ἮΔ Ὑατταοίν', on Thursday	Ὑατταοίν, f., Thursday
ἮΔ η-Δοίη, on Friday	Δοίη, f., Friday
ἮΔ Σατταίν, on Saturday	Σατταίν, m., Saturday

**448.** ἮΔ takes the name of the day in the genitive case; it is used only when "on" is, or may be, used in English—i.e., when the word is adverbial.

ἮΔ is really an old word for day. It occurs in the two expressions : η-ἮΔ, to-day; : η-Ἦέ, yesterday. It is now never used except before the names of the days of the week, and in the two expressions just mentioned.

**449.**

### "Head-foremost."

He fell head-foremost,	Ἦο τῦτ πέ : ηἮαίῶ* Ἀ ḡνν.
I fell head-foremost,	Ἦο τῦτεαρ : ηἮαίῶ η.ο ḡνν.
She fell head-foremost,	Ἦο τῦτ ρί : ηἮαίῶ Ἀ ḡνν.
They fell head-foremost,	Ἦο τῦτεαυαρ : ηἮαίῶ Ἀ ḡνν.

---

\* ηἮαίῶ is a phrase meaning "after," and is followed by a genitive case.

**However.**

**However** followed in English by an adjective or an adverb is translated into Irish by the preposition **oo** (*or oe*), the possessive adjective **Δ**, and an **abstract noun** corresponding to the English adjective or adverb.

However good, **oo'Δ fεaδap**. However long, **oo'Δ fΔio**.

However great, **oo'Δ mεio**. However violent, **oo'Δ εiγnige**.

However high, **oo'Δ Δoipoe**. However young, **oo'Δ oige**

**The Adverb "The."**

The sooner the better,	{	<b>oo'Δ luaitε 'read</b> (i <b>ρ</b>
		<b>Δmλaiθ</b> ) i <b>ρ</b> fεap <b>ρ</b> .
		<b>ni't oΔ luaitε naC Δmλaiθ</b>
		<b>(eΔθ)</b> i <b>ρ</b> fεap <b>ρ</b> .
The longer...the bolder,	{	<b>oo'Δ luaitεΔCt iρ fεap<b>ρ</b>oe</b> .
		<b>oo'Δ fΔio 'read iρ oΔna</b> .
The sooner...the less,	{	<b>oo'Δ luaitε 'read iρ luγa</b> .

**CHAPTER VII.****Prepositions.**

**450.** The following list contains the simple prepositions in use in modern Irish :—

<b>i, Δ, in, (Δnn) in.</b>	<b>γo, to (motion).</b>
<b>Δγ, (Δiγ), at.</b>	<b>noim, before.</b>
<b>Δp, (Δip), on.</b>	<b>ioip, between.</b>
<b>Δp, out of.</b>	<b>te, with.</b>
<b>oΔp, by (in swearing).</b>	<b>o, from.</b>
<b>oe, off, from.</b>	<b>Δap, {</b>
<b>oo, to.</b>	<b>Δap, } over, across.</b>
<b>fε, fΔoi, fó, fΔ, under.</b>	<b>cpé, cpío, through.</b>
<b>γan, without.</b>	<b>um, im, concerning, about.</b>

## CHAPTER VIII.

## Conjunctions.

451. The following is a list of the conjunctions in use at present:—

de bpiġ 5o		mā, vā, if.
faoi rāb 'r 5o,	} because.	muna, muna, if...not.
cion ir,		5iðeab, however.
cion ir 5o,		ċor leir rin,
aċt, but, except.		ruo eile (ðe), } moreover.
a5ur (a'r, ir, 'r), and.		tulle fōr,
ioir...a5ur, both...and.		tulle eile,
an (ar), whether ( <i>interrog.</i> )		mar, as.
ar a jon 5o,	} although.	nā, than ; nor.
ruo ir 5o,		5o (5ur), that.
cio, 5io,		mar ir 5o, as though.
cé 5o, 5io 5o,		i tpeo 5o (nac),
5o,	} until (with verbs).	ar nōr 5o (nac),
nō 5o,		ar moð 5o (nac),
aċt 5o,		i 5cār 5o (nac),
5o vci 5o,		ar ċor 5o (nac),
com luaċ ar,	} as soon as.	ar ðoiġ 5o (nac),
vā luar ġ,		i 5caoi 5o (nac),
an tūirge 5o,		ionnur 5o (nac),*
fōr, yet, still.		reaċar, compared with.
ruġ ; rar,	} before.	nō, or.
ruġ a vci,		ō, since, because.
ruġ mā vci,		ō nac, since...not.
ruġ vā vci,		ōir, for, because.

\* 5o and nac are very frequently separated from ionnur by a subordinate or relative clause: *e.g.*, "ionnur, an tī ar a mbiað an mġin rin, 5o mbiað teaġmann aġe ó'n oirleaċ;" *so that the person who would be marked with that sign would have protection from the slaughter.*

mairead, well, if so.                      ó tárla go, whereas.  
 uime rin, therefore, where-      tar ceann, moreover, be-  
     fore.                                      sides, furthermore.  
 ar an ádhair rain, therefore.      nac                                      }  
 mar rin fein, even so.              ná, ná go,                      } that...not  
 bíod go, although, whether  
     ...or.

**452.** In Munster "that...not" is usually translated by *ná* followed by the dependent form of the verb. *ná* neither aspirates nor eclipses. In the past tense it becomes *nár* which causes aspiration. Whenever "that...not" follows a negative (or a *virtual* negative) phrase, *ná go* is used (*ná gur* in the past tense).

*Tá fíor aige fein ná fuil an ceart aige.* He knows himself that he is not right.

*Ní deirim (or deirim) ná go bfuil an ceart aige.* I don't say that he is not right.

*nac* is used in Munster as a part of the verb *ir*.

**453.** The use of *MAR* before a clause is noteworthy.

*pá mar a dúbairt ré,* (according) as he said.

*tar mar bí ré deic mbliadhna rícead ó foin.*

Beyond (or compared with) how it was 80 years ago.

*i dtáob mar deir tú,* regarding what you say.

*táinig ré mar a raib fionn.* He came to where Finn was.

map atá or map atáir, that is, viz., i.e.

map go mbad iad féin do deunam an  
gníoma, as if it were they who per-  
formed the act.

map an gceudna, likewise.

map geall ar, on account of.

## CHAPTER IX.

### 454. Interjections and Interjectional Phrases.

A,

O (the sign of the Vocative  
case).

hush ! list !

Eiré,

féiríor !

féiríor !

mo bhrón !

mo cneac !

mo léan !

mo léan geur !

feuc !

Ó bá bá ! oc ! uc ! ucón !

mo náipe tú !

. . . a bá !

fáilte nómat !

Alas !

Behold ! lo !

Alas !

Shame on you !

Hurrah for . . .

Welcome !

Dia 'do beata! }	
'Sé 'do beata! }	Hail!
Slán leat (lib)! }	
Slán beo agat (agait)! }	Good-bye!
Beannaíct leat (lib)! }	
Dia linn!	God be with us!
Maireadó!	Well! Musha!
Forisíó (forisne)!	Patience!
Faíne!	Take care! Fie!
Go dtéir tú slán!	Safe home!
Go forbrúisíó Dia duit!	God prosper you!
Bí 'do tórt! }	
Eirí 'do beul! }	Silence!
Mo goínm tá!	Bravo!
Súo ort! }	
Sláinte! }	Good health!
Mait an fear!	Good man!
Mait an buachaill!	Good fellow!
Duibheadáir leat! }	
Go faib mait agat! }	Thanks! thank you!
Go n-éiríisíó do leat!	Good luck to you!
Náir léisíó Dia rin!	God forbid!
Go mbeannuísíó Dia duit!	God save you! Good morning! &c.
Go maireir, }	
Go maireir tú! }	Long life to you!
Go bpoisíó Dia orainn!	God help us!
Oiríce mait duit!	May you have a good night!
Go dtugair Dia oiríce mait duit!	May God give you a good night!



Go mbuaðaið Dia leat !	God grant you success !
Slán coisalta na h-oirde aḡat !	Sound night's sleep to you !
Go scootaip go páin !	May you sleep peacefully !
Dia ó Dia oir !	God bless you !
Cuideacán Dé leat !	May God accompany you !
Fao faoḡail aḡat !	Long life to you !
Buaíð leat !	Success to you !
Raé go páin oir !	
'Seað !	Well !
Seað anois !	There now !
Coḡar i leit !	Whisper (here) !
Ambara !	Indeed !
Mo ḡraíðin coirde tu !	Bravo !
A cúir !	My dear !
Aé aithe !	Dear me !

---

## CHAPTER X.

---

### WORD-BUILDING.

---

#### Prefixes.

**455.** The following is a list of the principal prefixes used in Irish. Some of them have double forms owing to the rule *caol te caol*.

ἀίρ or εἰρ, back, again ; like the English *re* ;

ῖoc, payment ; ἀίριoc, repayment, restitution.

ἀή	or	ἀή,	Negative particles	ῖερό, even ; ἀίμῖερό, un- even.
ἀή	„	ἀή,		τῖάτ, time ; ἰ η-ἀντῖάτ, un- timely.
οἶ	„	οἶο,*		ceann, a head ; οἶceannaδῶ to behead.
μή	„	μήο,		coηάιπτε, an advice ; μήo- coηάιπτε, an evil advice.
νεμή	„	νεμή,		νιῶ, a thing ; νεμήννιῶ, no- thing, non-entity.
		εάρ,		εάιρῶεαρ, friendship ; εάρ- εάιρῶεαρ, enmity.

ε or εἰ, a negative particle. It eclipses c and τ and becomes εἰς before ρ. Cόη, just ; εἰςcόη, unjust ; τῖom, heavy ; εἰςτῖom, light ; coηάιτ, like ; εὐγῖαμἰτ, different.

οῖoc, bad, evil ; μεάρ, esteem ; οῖoc-μεάρ, reproach, disesteem.

coη, equal ; ἀίμῖρ, time ; coη-ἀίμῖεαῖαc, contemporary.

---

\* οἶ, οἶo eclipse words beginning with b or c, οἶomburῶεάτ, ingratitude.

an,	} Intensifying particles	mór, big; an-mór, very big.
it, iot,		oat, a colour; iot-oatác, many-coloured.
ró,		mór, big; ró-mór, too big.
ráp,		te, warm; ráp-te, excessively warm
lán,		aióóéit, vast; lán-aióóéit, awfully vast.
úr,		ḡpánōa, ugly; úr-ḡpánōa, very ugly.

teat, a half; teat-uair, half an hour; rgeut, a story; teit-rgeut, an excuse.

in, ion, fit, suitable; veunta, done; in-veunta, fit to be done; páiōte, said; ion-páiōte, fit to be said; ion-molta, praiseworthy; ion-óitca, drinkable; in-itte, eatable, edible. (See pars. 286, 288.)

neum, before; páiōte, said; neum-páiōte, aforesaid.

rrut, back; rrut-teact, coming and going; rrut-buataō, palpitation, or a return stroke.

ban, a feminine prefix; flait, a prince; ban-flait, a princess; bain-tigeapna, a lady.

at, a reiterative particle: páō, a saying; at-páō, a repetition; atuair, another time; an atōliatōain, next year; an atfeactimain, next week. At has sometimes the force of "dis" in dismantle, as cumatō, to form;

αἰῶμαθ, to deform, destroy; ρηγᾶθ, to crown, to elect a king; ἀπρίογᾶθ, to de-throne.

βίτ, βιότ, lasting, constant; βυαν, lasting; βιότ-βυαν, everlasting; βίτ-πίνευν, ever-faithful.

οο and ρο, two particles which have directly opposite meanings, as have often the letters ο and ρ. Οο denotes *difficulty, ill, or the absence of some good quality*; ρο denotes the opposite.

οο-θευντα, hard to be done	ρο-θευντα, easy to be done
οότάρ, sorrow	ρότάρ, comfort, joy
οοναρ, bad-luck	ροναρ, good-luck
ουβᾶς, sad	ρυβᾶς, merry
οαιρόβη, poor	ραιρόβη, rich
οδοι, a fool	ροδοι, a wise man
οίτ, want, misery	ρίτ, peace, plenty
ουβᾶιτς, vice	ρυβᾶιτς, virtue
οδορ, condemned, dear	ροδορ, free, cheap
οότάρ, harm	ροότάρ, profit
οονα, unlucky, unhappy	ρονα, lucky, happy
οοινεανν, bad weather	ροινεανν, fine weather
οοκαμάιτ, inconvenient	ροκαμάιτ, convenient

#### 456. Affixes or Terminations.

ᾶς, when it is the termination of an adjective, means full of, abounding in: βματάρ, a word; βματρᾶς, wordy, talkative; πευρᾶς, grassy.

ac, when it is the termination of a noun, denotes a person or personal agent: as Éipeannaac, an Irishman; Albanac, a Scotchman.

act is an abstract termination, like the English *-ness*: mitir, sweet; mitreadact, sweetness.

N.B.—The termination -act is usually added to adjectives.

aiœe, uœe, iœe, are personal terminations denoting an agent: rgeut, a story; rgeutuœe, a storyteller; cor, a foot; coiœe, a pedestrian.

aœe, œe, are also personal terminations denoting an agent: ceatg, deceit; ceatgaœe, a deceiver.

amail, a termination having the very same force as the English *like* or *ly*: fearmail, manly; flaiteamail, princely, generous.

ar, ear, or sometimes r alone, an abstract termination like act: maic, good; maicear, goodness; ceann, a head; ceannar, headship, authority.

oar and œe have a collective force: as, ouille, a leaf (of a tree); ouilleaoar, foliage.

oa oa, or ta, is an adjectival termination which has usually the force of the English *-like*: móroa, majestic; óroa, golden; gailloa, exotic, foreign (from gail, a stranger, a foreigner).

e is an abstract termination like *áct* or *ár*: whenever it is added to an adjective the resulting abstract noun, owing to the rule "*caol te caol*," has the very same form as the *genitive singular feminine of the adjective*: as, *fiál*, generous; *féile*, generosity; *áir*, high; *áiríoe*, height; *geal*, bright; *gile*, brightness; *áitne*, beauty.

*lać*, *nać*, *rać*, *tać*, *trać*, have all the same meaning as *áć*, viz., full of, abounding in: *muc*, a pig; *muctać*, a piggery; *coilt*, a wood; *coiltteáć*, a place full of woods; *fuilteáć*, bloody; *toilteáć* (*toilteannać*), willing.

*maí* means *full of, abounding in*: *ceol*, music; *ceolmaí*, musical; *speann*, fun; *speannmaí*, full of fun, amusing; *ciailmaí*, sensible, intelligent.

*óir*, *uóir*, or *tuóir*, denotes a *personal agent*: *rpeat*, a scythe; *rpeatuóir*, a mower, reaper; *uóir-reóir*, a door-keeper.

### Diminutives.

457. In Irish there are three diminutive terminations, viz., *ín*, *áin*, and *óg*. However, *ín* is practically the only diminutive termination in Modern Irish as *áin* and *óg* have almost lost their diminutive force. A double diminutive is sometimes met with, as *áir-áinín*, a very little height.



## ín.

**458.** The termination **ín**, meaning “small” or “little,” may be added to almost every Irish noun. Whenever the final consonant is broad it must be made slender (as the **ín** always remains unaltered), the vowels undergoing the same changes as in the formation of the genitive singular, but **C** is not changed into **Ṣ** (see pars. 60 and 78).

asat, an ass	asatín, a little ass
feap, a man	feapín, a „ man
ḡort, a field	ḡortín, a „ field
caitlead, an old woman	caitlicín, a „ old woman
rráio, a street	rráioín, a „ street, a lane

If the noun ends in **e**, drop the **e** and add **ín**; but if the noun ends in **Δ**, drop the **Δ** and attenuate the preceding consonant; then add **ín**.

páirce páirceín nóra nóirín mála máilín

**459.****án.**

rrután, a brook,	from rput, a stream.
ároán, a hillock,	„ áro, high.
ceatḡán, a knitting-needle,	„ ceatḡ, a thorn.
biopán, a pin,	„ biop, a spit.
leabrán, a booklet,	„ leabap, a book.
ḡeugán, a twig,	„ ḡeug, a branch.
toacán, a little lake,	„ toc, a lake.
ḡḡiatán, a wing,	„ ḡḡiat, a shield.

The above are examples of real diminutives, but such examples are not very numerous.

460.

Óḡ.

ṗṗṗṗṗṗ (ṗṗṗṗṗṗṗ), a worm, from ṗṗṗṗṗ, a reptile.

ṗṗṗṗṗ, a match, „ ṗṗṗ, a light.

ḡṗṗṗṗṗ, a little fork, „ ḡṗṗṗṗ, a fork.

These are examples of real diminutives in Óḡ, but such real diminutives are not numerous, as most nouns in Óḡ have practically the same meaning as the nouns from which they were derived (the latter being now generally obsolete): *cuiteÓḡ*, a fly, from *cuit*, a fly; *ṗṗṗṗṗṗ*, a briar, from *ṗṗṗṗ*, a briar; *ṗṗṗṗṗṗṗ*, an ash, from *ṗṗṗṗṗṗ*, an ash.

In Craig's Grammar we find *ṗṗṗṗṗ*, a rat (*ṗṗṗ*, a mouse). This example is a striking instance of the fact that the termination Óḡ is losing (if it has not already lost) its diminutive force.

All derived nouns in Óḡ are feminine.

### Derived Nouns.

461. Words are of three classes—Simple, Derivative, and Compound. All simple words are, as a general rule, monosyllables; they are the roots from which derivative and compound words spring. Derivative words are made up of two or more parts. These parts undergo slight changes when they are united to form words, and thus the component parts are somewhat disguised. The difficulty which presents itself to a student in the spelling of Irish is more apparent than real. The principle of vowel-assimilation is the key to

Irish spelling. Let a student once thoroughly grasp the rules for "caol te caol, &c," "aspiration," "eclipsis," "attenuation," and "syncope," and immediately all difficulty vanishes.

Derivatives are formed of simple words and particles. The most important of the latter have been already given under the headings "Prefixes" and "Affixes." We will here give some examples of derivative nouns, a careful study of which will enable the student to split up the longest words into their component parts, and thus arrive at their meanings.

462. *trom* means heavy; *tromar*, i.e., *trom* + *ar* (the abstract termination) means heaviness or weight; *éadrom*, light, from *trom*, and the negative particle *éa*, which eclipses *c* and *t*, hence the *o*; *éadtromar*, lightness, from *éa*, not; *trom*, heavy; *ar*, ness; *comtrom*, impartial, fair, or just; from *com*, equal, and *trom*, heavy; *comtromar*, impartiality, fairness, &c.; *éagcomtrom*, partial, unjust; from *éa* + *com* + *trom*; *éagcomtromar*, partiality, injustice; from *éa* + *com* + *trom* + *ar*. *Spealaíóir*, a reaper; from *rpeat*, a scythe, and *íóir*, an affix denoting an agent; the *a* is put in between the *i* and *o* to assist pronunciation: *cáiríoe*, friends; *cáiríoeas*, friendliness, friendship; *eugcáiríoeas*, unfriendliness, hostility: *feapamlaet*, manliness; from *feap* + *amail* + *aet*: *neim-geanamlaet*, unamiability; from *neim*, not + *gean*, affection + *amail* + *aet*: *pioḡaet*, a

kingdom, from  $\pi\acute{o}\varsigma + \alpha\epsilon\tau$ :  $\kappa\omicron\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\varsigma$ , comparison, emulation, competition; from  $\kappa\omicron$  ( $\kappa\omicron\mu$ ), equal, and  $\mu\acute{o}\rho\tau\alpha\varsigma$ , greatness, i.e., comparing the greatness of one thing with that of another.

**463.** Compound nouns are formed by the union of two or more simple nouns, or of a noun and an adjective.

(A.) A compound noun formed of two or more nouns, each in the nominative case, has its declension determined by the last noun. Its gender also is that of the last noun, unless the first noun-part be such as requires a different gender. The first word qualifies the second, and the initial consonant of the second is *usually* aspirated.

(B.) If the compound is formed of a noun in the nominative form followed by a genitive noun, the first is the principal noun, and determines the declension and gender; the second qualifies the first, and generally remains unaltered, and the aspiration of the initial consonant in this case depends on the gender of the first noun. See par. 21(f).

We will give here a few examples of the two chief kinds of compound nouns. It is usual to employ a hyphen between the nouns in Class A, but not in Class B.

## 464.

## Class A.

bpeuſ-ŕí, a pseudo king

bun-ŕpuť, a fountain

cat-bapp, a helmet

clap-ŕolap, twilight

cloig-teac, a belfry

cpaoß-fleapſ, a garland

cút-caint, back-biting

caoir-ŕeoit, mutton

laoiſ-ŕeoit, veal

muic-ŕeoit, pork, bacon

maipt-ŕeoit, beef

lám-õia, a household god

lám-euroac, a handker-  
chief, a napkin

lám-õpo, a hand-sledge

leit-ŕgeut,\* an excuse

õp-ŕlat, a sceptre; õp, gold; and ŕlat, a rod

cip-ſpáß, patriotism; cip, country; and ſpáß, love

bpeuſ, a lie, and ŕí, a king

bun, a source, origin, and

ŕpuť, a stream

cat, a battle, and bapp  
top, headclog, a clock, bell, and  
teac, a housecpaoß, a branch, and  
fleapſ, a wreathcút, the back of the head,  
and caint, talk

ŕeoit, flesh; caopa, a sheep

laog, a calf; muc, a pig

maipt, a beef

lám, a hand; õia, God;

euroac, a cloth; õpo, a  
sledgeleac, a half, and ŕgeut,  
a story

\*ſpáß mo leit ŕgeut I beg your pardon. (Lit. Accept my excuse)

## 465.

## Class B.

brac cairé, a winding-sheet (a garment of death).

feap ceolt, a musician (a man of music).

feap feara, a seer (a man of knowledge; fear, gen. feara).

feap tige, a householder (a man of a house).

mac tíre, a wolf (son of (the) country).

cú mara, an otter (a hound of the sea; muir, gen. mara).

laog mara, a seal (a calf of the sea).

feap ionaid, a lieutenant, vicegerent (a man of place).

teac órta, an inn, hotel (a house of entertainment).

maighistir scoile, a schoolmaster (a master of a school).

uó cínce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen.)

bean ríde or bean t-ríde, a **fairy** (a woman of the ríod, a fairy hill).

## 466.

## A Noun and an Adjective.

áró-rí, a high king.

áró-tigeapna, a sovereign lord.

áró-réim, supreme power, chief power.

claoon-breic, partiality; claoon, inclined: and breic, judgment.

cpom-teac, a druidical altar; cpom, bent; and teac, a stone, flag.

uaoir-breic, condemnation; uaoir, condemned.

uaoir-óglác, a bond-slave; óglác, a servant.



deapbbrátaip (deapb-bbrá-  
 taip), a brother by blood } deapb, real or true.  
 deipbriúr, a sister by } bbrátaip and riúr, brother  
 blood. } and sister (in reli-  
 gion).

fíon-uirge, spring water: fíon, true, pure; uirge, water.  
 garb-íon, a tempest: garb, rough; and íon, weather.  
 gírr-fíad, a hare: gearr, short; and fíad, a deer.  
 nuad-óuine, an upstart: nuad, new, fresh; and óuine  
 a person.

rean-atáip, a grandfather, }  
 rean-rean-atáip (ré-rean-  
 atáip), a great grand- } rean, old; atáip, a father.  
 father. } mátaip, a mother;  
 rean-mátaip, a grand- } aoip, age.  
 mother. }  
 rean-aoip, old age. }  
 rean-reaet, the old law. } reaeet, law; olige is a  
 more common word  
 for law.

treun-fear, a brave man.

treun-laoó, a hero.

raop-fealb, a freehold: realb, possession.

tróm-lunge, a nightmare.

uapal-atáip, a patriarch.

raoib-ciatt, folly, silliness: raoib, silly; and ciatt, sense

fóip-briataip, an adverb: fóip, before; and briataip, a  
 word.

fóip-imeall, a frontier, extremity; imeall, a border, a  
 hem.

fóip-breic, a prejudice (a fore-judgment).

fóip-neart, violence.

fóip-éigean, oppression, compulsion.

## Formation of Adjectives.

467. (a) Adjectives may be formed from many nouns by the addition of **ΔĆ** or **ΕΔĆ**, which signifies *full of, abounding in*. All these adjectives belong to the first declension, and are declined like **οἶπεΔĆ**.

## NOUN.

**ρεαρς**, anger  
**ρυἷλ**, blood  
**ρευρ**, grass  
**βυΔἰρ**, victory  
**βρευς**, a lie  
**οἶδεΔἰλ**, one's best endeavour  
**your**

**ρεαρΔἰλ**, standing  
**ςνρ**, work  
**εἰἰ**, fame  
**ραοτΔἰλ**, toil  
**εἰἰ**, a loop  
**ραοςΔἰλ**, life  
**ρΔἰτ**, sufficiency  
**ΔἰλΔἰλ**, Scotland  
**ςΔἰρΔἰλ**, England  
**εραοβ**, branch  
**εαρρΔἰλ**, a rock  
**βρρρ**, sorrow  
**ρΔἰ**, dirt  
**ρρρ**, knowledge  
**Δἰρ**, joy  
**οοἰςρρ**, sorrow

## ADJECTIVE.

**ρεαρςΔĆ**, angry  
**ρυἷτεΔĆ**, bloody  
**ρευρΔĆ**, grassy  
**βυΔἰΔĆ**, victorious  
**βρευςΔĆ**, false, lying  
**οἶδεΔἰλΔĆ**, energetic

**ρεαρρΔĆ**, steadfast  
**ςνρΔĆ**, busy  
**εἰἰτεΔĆ**, famous  
**ραοτρΔĆ**, industrious  
**εἰἰΔĆ**, deceitful  
**ραοςΔĆ**, long-lived  
**ρΔἰτΔĆ**, satiated  
**ΔἰλΔἰλΔĆ**, Scotch  
**ςΔἰρΔἰλΔĆ**, English  
**εραοβΔĆ**, branchy  
**εαρρςΔĆ**, rocky  
**βρρρΔĆ**, sorrowful  
**ρΔἰΔĆ**, dirty  
**ρρρΔĆ**, intelligent  
**ΔἰρΔĆ**, joyous  
**οοἰςρρΔĆ**, sorrowful

## NOUN.

cleap, a trick  
 cuirpe, weariness  
 uirge, water  
 neul, a cloud  
 leanb, a child  
 gaot, wind  
 imniðe, anxiety  
 cúmaçt, power  
 reult, a star  
 aipe, care  
 foigib, patience  
 eagla, fear  
 toit, a will  
 cúram, heed  
 iomaipca, too much

## ADJECTIVE.

cleapac, tricky  
 cuirpeac, weary  
 uirgeac, watery  
 neulac, cloudy  
 leanbac, childish  
 gaotac, windy  
 imniðeac, anxious  
 cúmaçtac, powerful  
 reultac, starry  
 aipeac, attentive  
 foigibac, patient  
 eaglac, timid  
 toitteanac, willing  
 cúramac, careful  
 iomaipcac, excessive,  
 copious

(b). Many adjectives are formed by adding **mAR** to nouns.

All these adjectives belong to the first declension and are declined like **mop**.

## NOUN.

at, luck  
 ceol, music  
 ciall, sense  
 feup, grass  
 feoil, flesh  
 fonn, fanev

## ADJECTIVE.

atmair, lucky.  
 ceolmair, musical  
 ciallmair, sensible  
 feupmair, grassy  
 feoilmair, fleshy  
 fonnmair, desirous

## NOUN.

glóir, glory  
 speann, fun  
 luac, price, value  
 líon, number  
 neart, strength  
 rḡát, a shadow  
 lúct, activity

## ADJECTIVE.

glórmair, glorious  
 speannmair, funny  
 luacmair, valuable  
 líonmair, numerous  
 neartmair, powerful  
 rḡátmair, shy, startled  
 lútmair, active, nimble

(c). Very many adjectives are formed from nouns by the addition of *amail* or *eamail* (both pronounced oo-il or u-wil). All these adjectives belong to the third declension.

## NOUN.

féar, a man  
 bean, a woman  
 flaíct, a prince  
 ainm, a name  
 meap, esteem  
 lá (pl. laete), a day  
 gráin, hatred  
 cara (pl. cáirṑe), a friend  
 naim (pl. naimṑe), an enemy  
 cṑoíṑe, a heart  
 rí (gen. ríog), a king  
 caoi (pl. caoiṑe), a way  
 ríar, order

## ADJECTIVE.

féaramail, manly  
 beanamail, womanly  
 flaíteamail, generous  
 ainmeamail, renowned  
 mearamail, estimable  
 laeteamail, daily  
 gráineamail, hateful  
 cáirṑeamail, friendly  
 naimṑeamail, hostile  
 cṑoíṑeamail, hearty, gay  
 ríogamail, kingly, royal  
 caoiṑeamail, opportune  
 ríaramail, subject, docile  
 obedient

gean, affection  
 moṑ, manner

geanamail, affectionate  
 moṑamail, mannerly

## NOUN.

tír (pl. tíortha), country  
 meirneac, }  
 mírneac, } **courage**  
 teine (pl. teinte), fire  
 ríab, (pl. ríeibte), a mountain  
 spreann, fun  
 eun, a bird  
 comurra, a neighbour  
 barántar, authority

## ADJECTIVE.

tíorthamail, country-like,  
 homely, social  
 mírneamail, courageous  
 teinteamail, fiery, igneous  
 ríeibteamail, mountainous  
 spreannamail, funny, gay  
 eunamail, bird-like, airy  
 comurramail, neighbourly  
 barántamail, authentic

(d). There is a fourth class of adjectives formed by the termination **ṪA** (**ṪA**) ; but it is not as large as the three preceding classes. The following are some of the principal ones :—

ṪiaṪa, godly, divine  
 fearṪa, masculine  
 banṪa, feminine  
 órṪa, golden, gilt  
 laocṪa, heroic  
 reanṪa, ancient

Ṫaona (ṪaonaṪa) human  
 ṪránṪa, ugly  
 cróṪa, brave  
 beoṪa, lively  
 ṪallṪa, exotic or foreign  
 naomṪa (naomṪa), holy  
 saintly

Compound adjectives are extremely common in Irish, being usually formed by the union of two or more simple adjectives (sometimes of a noun and an

adjective); but these compound adjectives present no difficulty once the simple adjectives have been mastered.

## FORMATION OF VERBS

**468.** Verbs can be readily formed from nouns and adjectives by the addition of **1ḡ** or **u1ḡ**. The addition of this termination is sometimes accompanied by syncope, which often necessitates slight vowel changes in accordance with the rule “caol te caol.”

### **469. (a). Verbs derived from Nouns.**

#### **NOUN.**

ainm, a name  
 beatha, life  
 cuimne, memory  
 cuid, a part  
  
 cúl, the back of the head  
 raolta, exertion  
 cuairt, a visit  
 leas, improvement  
 neart, strength  
 áct, a decree  
 bá, death  
 cat, a battle  
 céim, a step  
 críoch, an end  
 cirt, a trembling

#### **VERB (Stem).**

ainmnig, name  
 beathuig, nourish  
 cuimnig, remember  
 cuidig te, assist (take part with)  
  
 cúluig, retire  
 raoltaig, exert  
 cuairtuig, visit, search  
 leasig, improve  
 neartaig, strengthen  
 áctuig, decree, enact  
 báig, put to death  
 cataig, contend, fight  
 céimnig, step, advance  
 críochnuig, finish  
 cirtuig, tremble



## NOUN.

ζορτα, hunger, injury
ιομαο, multitude
ορτο, an order
ροτορ, a light
τορ (τορ), a beginning
τροορ, a guide
πιαν, pain
οβαορ, work

## VERB (Stem).

ζορτοοις, injure
ιομαοοις, multiply
ορτοοις, order, command
ροτοοις, enlighten
τοροις, begin
τροοοις, guide, lead
πιανοις, cause pain
οιβοοις, work

## (b). Verbs derived from Adjectives.

## ADJECTIVE.

αρο, high
βαν, white
ουο, black
βοοδαο, deaf
βυαν, lasting
φοτοορ, apparent
φυαρ, cold
λας, weak
ρλαν, well
τιρμ, dry
βοοτ, poor
σεαρτ, right
μιν, fine
φιοτ, low
μηατ, humble
ραιοοοιρ, rich

## VERB (Stem).

αροοις, raise
βανοις, whiten
ουοοις, blacken
βοοδοοις, deafen, bother
βυανοις, preserve
φοτοοοις, reveal, show
φυαοοις, cool, chill
λαςοις, weaken
ρλανοις, make well, cure
τιορμιοις, or τιρμιοις, dry
βοοτοοις, impoverish
σεαρτοοις, correct
μινιοις, make fine, explain
φριοις, lower
μητοοις, humble
ραιοοοοις, enrich

The compound verbs are very few, and are therefore of little consequence to the beginner.

## PART III.—SYNTAX.

### CHAPTER I.

#### The Article.

470. In Irish the article always precedes its noun, and agrees with it in gender, number and case as, *an fear*, the man; *na fir*, the men; *an fir*, of the man; *na mná*, of the woman.

471. When one noun governs another in the genitive case the article cannot be used with the first noun: as, *mac an fir*, the son of the man; *fear an tíse*, the man of the house, &c.

Notice the difference between *the son of the man*, *mac an fir*, and *a son of the man*, *mac do'n fear*.

**Exceptions.** (1) When a demonstrative adjective is used with the first noun (the governing one), the article must also be used; as, *tá an teach sin mo cara le díol*, that house of my friend's is for sale.

(2) If the two nouns form a compound word, the article is used before the first, if used in English: a newspaper, *páipeir nuairéadta*; but, the newspaper, *an páipeir nuairéadta*.

(3) When the noun in the genitive case is an indefinite\* one, *which denotes a part of something, the material of which a thing is made, or the contents of the first noun*, the article is used with the first noun when it is used in English :—

an speim apáin, the piece of bread.

an mála mine, the bag of meal.

an cpúirgín uirge, the little jug of water.

We say blas apáin, for, the taste of bread ; bolat éirg, the smell of fish ; mac ríog, the son of a king ; because if the noun in the genitive expresses quality, connection, or origin, the governing noun does not take the article.

472. If a nominative be followed by several genitives the article can be used only with the last (if “the” be used in English), as, cruime cinn an capaiti, the weight of the horse’s head.

The article is often omitted before a noun which is antecedent to a relative clause ; as, is é tuine do bhann. He is the person who was there.

473. In the following cases the definite article is frequently used in Irish though not used in English.

(1) Before surnames, when not preceded by a Christian name, as, Raib an Uíeatnac ann? Was Walsh there?

---

\* See par. 585.

(2) Before the names of some countries, as, an Spáinn, Spain; an ſpáine, France; rí na h-Éireann, the king of Ireland: also before Rome, 'ran Róim, in Rome; ó'n Róim, from Rome. The article is not used before the names of Ireland, England or Scotland in the nominative and dative cases.

(3) Before abstract nouns: an t-ocpar, hunger. Is maíť an t-anntann an t-ocpar. Hunger is a good sauce.

We frequently use an bář for "death."

The article is not used in such sentences, as:—

Tá ocpar orm. I am hungry.

(4) Before nouns qualified by the demonstrative adjectives: an fear sin, that man; an bean so, this woman.

(5) Before adjectives used as nouns:

an maíť agus an t-olc, goodness and badness.

Is fearr liom an glar ná an dearg. I prefer green to red.

(6) After "Cé" meaning "which" or "what."

Cé an fear? Which man?

Cé an leabhar? What book?

(7) To translate "apiece," "per" or "a" before words expressing weight and measure;

Raol an ceann. Sixpence apiece.

In speaking of *a period of time* ra (inſ an) is used: as, uair ra mbliadain, once a year.

## (8). Before titles :

Δν τ-ατάιν Εοζαν υα Ξραμνα. Father Eugene  
O'Growney.

Δν τ-ατάιν Ρεαοαρ υα Λαοζαίρε. Father Peter  
O'Leary.

Δν τοότúιν Ουόζταρ Όε η-ΐοε. Dr. Douglas Hyde.

## (9) To express any attribute :

Δ θεαν ηα τοπί ηβό. O woman of three cows.

(10) The article is used before the word denoting the use to which a thing is put, or the place where a thing is found or produced.

Μάλα ηα ηινη. The meal bag, i.e., the bag for holding meal.

Ερύργιν αν υίργε. The water-jug.

Compare these with the following :—

Δν μάλα ηινη. The bag of meal.

Δν ερύργιν υίργε. The jug of water.

## (11) Before the word "uite" meaning "every."

Δν uite ρεαρ. Every man.

Δν uite τίη. Every country.

(12) Whenever an indefinite noun, accompanied by an adjective is predicated of a pronoun by means of the verb ιρ, the definite article must be used with the noun whenever the adjective is placed immediately after the verb.

Ιρ βρεάξ αν λά ε. It is a fine day.

Ιρ ματ αν ρεαρ tú. You are a good man.

(13) Before the names of seasons, months, days of the week (when not preceded by the word *roé*).

Δν é αν Σατάρη ατά αζαίνη? Is to-day Saturday?

Δν ιντοῦ αν ἑλῶν? } Is this Monday?  
 Δν é ρεο αν ἑλῶν? }

ιντοῦ αν Δοιη. To-day is Friday.

## CHAPTER II.

### The Noun.

474. In Irish one noun governs another in the genitive case, and the governed noun comes after the governing one.

Ceann an capailt. The horse's head.

The noun, capailt, in the genitive case is aspirated by the article because it is masculine gender. It would not be aspirated if it were feminine. (See par. 40.)

475. When the governed noun in the genitive is a proper name it is generally aspirated, whether it be masculine or feminine, although the article is not used.

peann mÁire. Mary's pen.

leabhar Seagáin. John's book.

The last rule is by no means generally true of *place names*.



**476.** When the noun in genitive case has the force of an adjective, it is not preceded by the article, but its initial consonant is subject to precisely the same rules, with regard to aspiration and eclipsis, as if it were a simple adjective, *i.e.*, it is aspirated if the governing noun be nominative or accusative singular feminine, or genitive singular masculine. It is eclipsed if the governing noun be in the genitive plural.

uð cŕŕce, a hen-egg (an egg of a hen).

uibe cŕŕce, of a hen-egg.

ŕear ceoit, a musician.

ŕŕ ceoit, of a musician.

na ðŕear ŕceoit, of the musicians.

**477.** Apposition has almost entirely disappeared in modern Irish, the second noun being now usually in the nominative case, no matter what the case of the first may be.

**478.** A noun used adjectively in English is translated into Irish by the genitive case.

A gold ring, ŕáinne óŕ (lit. a ring of gold).

A hen-egg, uð cŕŕce.

Oatmeal, mín coŕŕce.

**479.** Collective nouns (except in their own plurals) always take the article and qualifying adjectives in the singular; they *sometimes* take a plural pronoun, and may take a plural verb.

TÁNGADAR AN BUIRDEAN CUPAD RIN DO LÁTAIR FINN AGUR  
DO BEANNUIG RÍAD DÓ. That company of warriors  
came into the presence of Finn, and saluted him  
(lit. to him).

**480. Nouns denoting fulness or a part of anything** are usually followed by the preposition *of* and the dative case, but the genitive is also used.

ceann (or gaoth) o'ar ngaothaib, one of our hounds.  
 bárr mo bhríge, the top of my shoe.  
 lán mo ùirín, the full of my fist.

In phrases such as "some of us," "one of them," &c., "of us," "of them," &c., are usually translated by ἀγαπῶ, ἀγα, &c.; but οἶνν, οἶοῦ, &c., may also be used.

**481. The personal numerals** from *οἶαρ* to *οἶαρεὺς* inclusive (see par. 177) **generally take their nouns in the genitive plural**: *βεῖρετ ἑμᾶς*, two sons; *ναονῶαρ ῥεαρ*, nine men (lit. two of sons, nine of men).

Ա իմիւր մաճ աջար զ ԾԺԻՄԻՐ ԵԱՆ.

His three sons and their three wives.

**482.** When used partitively they take *re* with the dative.

Üäitò ré naonbän öioö fä 'n loc.

He drowned nine of them under the lake.

**ἡδοὶ παροῦσαι οὐ μαροῦναι δὲ καὶ ἐλπεῖν.**

**Nine times nine of the stewards of Erin.**

### Personal Nouns.

**483.** An Irish name consists of two parts, the  $\alpha\iota\mu\mu\text{-}\beta\alpha\iota\rho\sigma\iota\upsilon\theta$  (or simply  $\alpha\iota\mu\mu$ ), which corresponds to the English Christian name, and the  $\rho\tau\omicron\iota\eta\eta\epsilon\alpha\theta$ , the surname or family name.

Surnames were first used in Ireland about the eleventh century: until that time every Irish personal name was significant, and sometimes rendered more so by the application of some epithet. "In the early ages individuals received their names from epithets implying some personal peculiarity, such as colour of hair, complexion, size, figure, certain accidents of deformity, mental qualities, such as bravery, fierceness, &c." Joyce's "Irish Names of Places."

**484.** When the Christian name is used in addressing a person, it is always in the vocative case, and preceded by the particle  $\Delta$ , which causes aspiration, *e.g.* :

$\rho\alpha\eta\ \tau\iota\omicron\mu, \Delta\ \text{S}\epsilon\alpha\gamma\acute{\alpha}\eta\eta.$  Wait for me, John.

$\text{O}\iota\alpha\ \theta\upsilon\iota\tau, \Delta\ \text{S}\epsilon\upsilon\mu\alpha\iota\rho.$  Good morning, James.

**485.** When the Christian name is in the genitive case, it is aspirated, *e.g.* :

$\text{L}\epsilon\alpha\beta\alpha\rho\ \eta\acute{\eta}\delta\iota\pi\epsilon.$  Mary's book.

$\text{S}\gamma\iota\alpha\eta\ \text{S}\epsilon\omicron\iota\rho\pi\epsilon.$  George's knife.

**486.** Surnames when not preceded by a Christian name usually take the termination  $\Delta\text{C}$ , which has the force of a patronymic (or father-name), and are declined like  $\mu\alpha\rho\epsilon\alpha\varsigma$  (par. 57). They are usually preceded by the article except in the vocative case :  $\alpha\eta\ \rho\alpha\omicron\upsilon\epsilon\alpha\varsigma$ , Power;  $\epsilon\alpha\pi\alpha\tau\tau\ \alpha\eta\ \text{O}\rho\iota\alpha\eta\alpha\iota\gamma$ , O'Brien's horse

Two forms are admissible in the vocative case; facility of pronunciation is the best guide, *e.g.*, *Ṣab i leit, a Ṗrianaig.* Come here, O'Brien. *a míc uí Laoṡaípe,* O'Leary. *a míc uí Suibne,* MacSweeney.

**487.** Surnames occurring in Ireland to-day are of three classes: (1) Surnames of Gaelic origin. These in almost every instance have the prefix *Ó* (*ua*) or *Mac* for a male, and *ní* or *níc* for a female. (2) Surnames of old foreign origin. The majority of these have no prefix. (3) Surnames of late foreign origin. Only a few of these have acquired a distinct form, pronounced in an Irish way.

**488.** When the surname is preceded by any of the words *Ó* (*ua*), *Mac*, *ní*, *níc*, the surname is in the genitive case, and is aspirated after *ní* or *níc*, but not after *Ó* or *Mac*: *e.g.*, *Seagán Mac Domnaill*, John McDonnell; *maípe ní Conaill*, Mary O'Connell; *Ṗiarmuro Ó Conaill*, Dermot O'Connell; *noṛa níc Domnaill*, Nora McDonnell.

**489.** When the whole name is in the genitive case, the words after *uí* (gen. of *Ó* or *ua*) and *míc* (gen. of *Mac*) are aspirated; *ní* and *níc* do not change in genitive. *leabap Seumair uí Ṗriain*, James O'Brien's book; *bo Ṗriain míc Domnaill*, Brian McDonnell's cow.

**490.** *Mac* and *Ó* aspirate when they really mean "son" and "grandson" respectively.

MAC Dómnaitt, Donal's son.

MAC Dómnaitt, McDonnell.

Ó Búain, Brian's grandson.

Ó Búain, O'Brien.

491. Some surnames take the article after *Mac* and *Ó*—e.g.:

Seumas *Mac an Báird*, James Ward.

Nóra *Nic an Ultaigh*, Nora McNulty.

## CHAPTER III.

### The Adjective.

492. An adjective may be used either **predicatively** or **attributively**. An adjective is used *predicatively* when it is predicated of a noun by a verb, and in this case it is *usually* separated from the noun by the verb. "The way was *long*, the wind was *cold*." "The day is *fine*." "He made the mantles *green*." "Long," "cold," "fine," and "green" are used *predicatively*. An adjective is used *attributively* whenever it is not separated from the noun by the verb, and is not predicated of a noun by a verb: as, "The *infirm* *old* minstrel went wearily along." "He made the *green* mantles." The adjectives "*infirm*," "*old*," and "*green*" are here used *attributively*.

493. In Irish almost every common adjective can be used both predicatively and attributively. There are, however, one or two exceptions: *ṛṇoc*, bad, and *ṛeaḡ*, good, can *never* be used predicatively. If "bad" or "good" be used predicatively in the English sentence, we must use *olc*, bad, or *maṭ*, good, in Irish. Never say or write *ṛ ṛeaḡ é* for "he is good," but *ṛ maṭ é*, &c.

The adjective *iomṛa* is always used predicatively with *ṛ*. In Munster *'mó* is used instead of *iomṛa*.

*ṛ iomṛa maṛcaḋ ṛo ḡaḋ an tṛiḡe reo.*

('Tis) many a rider (that) has gone this way.

## ADJECTIVE USED ATTRIBUTIVELY.

### (a) The Position of the Adjective.

494. As a general rule the adjective follows its noun in Irish: as, *leabhar mór*, a big book; *fear maṭ*, a good man.

**Exceptions.** (1) A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, always precedes its noun: as *trí ba*, three cows; *ṛá cṛc*, two hens. The *interrogative*, *possessive*, and most of the *indefinite adjectives* also precede their noun.

(2) Monosyllabic adjectives are frequently placed before the noun, but then the noun and adjective form a compound noun, and consequently the initial of the noun is aspirated, when possible. This is



always the case with adjectives: *deag*, good; *roo*, bad; *rean*, old; and frequently with *nuad*, new; and *rian*, true. In this position the form of the adjectives never changes for number or case, but it is subject to the very same initial changes as if it were a noun.

*rean-~~fe~~ar*, an old man; *rean-~~fi~~ar*, old men.

*treun-~~fe~~ar*, a brave man; *áró-~~rí~~*, a high king.

*an trean-~~be~~an*, the old woman;

*lám an trean-~~fi~~ar*, the hand of the old man.

(8) When a name consists of two words the adjective frequently comes between them: as, "*Súab geat gCua*," "the bright Slieve Gua."

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

When an adjective is used attributively and follows its noun, it agrees with the noun in gender, number, and case: as, *bean móir*, a big woman; *mac an ~~fi~~ar móir*, the son of the big man; *na ~~fi~~ar móra*, the big men.

For the aspiration and eclipsis of the adjective see par. 149.

493. Since the adjective in English has no inflexion for gender, it is quite a common thing to have one adjective qualifying two or more nouns of different genders. Sometimes in Irish we meet with one adjective qualifying two nouns of different genders or numbers; in such cases the adjective follows the

latter noun, and agrees with it alone. However, the more usual method is to use the adjective after each noun: as,

բար մաւտ ասր ԲԵԱՆ մաւտ.  
A good man and woman.

## ADJECTIVE USED PREDICATIVELY.

### (a) Position of the Adjective.

496. An adjective used predicatively always follows its noun, except when it is predicated by means of the verb **ԻՏ**, in any of its forms, expressed or understood.

The men are good,    ԵՃ ՈՒ ԲԻՐ մաւտ.  
The day is fine,      ԵՃ ԱՆ ԼՃ ԲՐԵՃՑ.

If the verb **ԻՐ** be used in these sentences, notice the position of the adjective and the use of the pronoun.

The men are good,    ԻՐ մաւտ ՈՒ ԲԻՐ ԻՄ.  
The day is fine,      ԻՐ ԲՐԵՃՑ ԱՆ ԼՃ Է.

### (b) Agreement of the Adjective.

An adjective used predicatively never agrees with its noun in either gender, number, or case: in other words, *the simple form of the adjective is always used*.

Moreover, it is never aspirated nor eclipsed by the noun.

497. When the adjective comes immediately after the Past Tense or Conditional of **ԻՐ** (i.e., **ԵՃ** or **ԵՍՕ**),

its initial is generally aspirated, when possible; but in this case it is not the noun which causes aspiration.

Da breáḡ an lá e. It was a fine day.

**498.** Notice the difference in meaning between the following:—

Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeupa He made the sharp knives.

Rinne ré ḡeup na rḡeana }  
Rinne ré na rḡeana ḡeup } He made the knives sharp.

Tá an bó mór dub. The big cow is black.

Tá an bó dub mór. The black cow is big.

Tá an oíche dorca fliuch. The night is dark and wet.

Tá an oíche fliuch dorca. The wet night is dark.

**499.** Adjectives denoting fulness or a part of anything are usually followed by *de* with the dative case:

full of milk, lán *de* bainne.

two barrels full of water, dá bapáile lán *o'* uirge.

## NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

### Position of the Words.

**500.** A numeral adjective, whether ordinal or cardinal, when it consists of one word, goes before the noun.

ceirpe capáill, four horses; ré caoirḡ, six sheep.

an céirḡ buacáill, the first boy.

The words for 40, 60, 80, 200, 300, &c., also precede their nouns.

**501.** A numeral adjective, except those just mentioned, consisting of two or more words, takes its noun immediately after the first part of the numeral: as,

ceitíre capall deug, fourteen horses.

ṽá uan deug, twelve lambs.

ṽá buin deug ir trí fíciṽ, seventy-two cows.

**502.** When we wish to express large numbers in Irish, we may either place the unit digit first, then the tens, next the hundreds, and so on; or we may express them in the English order. Convenience for utterance and clearness of sense are the best guides in any particular case.

The word **agus** is generally used with the larger numbers **céad**, **míle**, etc., and **is** with the smaller ones.

129 miles, **céad** (míle) **agus** naoi míle fícead.

79 horses, naoi gcapall **deas** ir trí fíciṽ.

5,635 men, cúig míle **agus** ré **céad** fear **agus** cúig fíir **deas** ar fíciṽ.

856 sheep, ré caoirí **deas** ir **ṽá** fíciṽ **agus** (ar) trí **céad**.

1,666 years, ré bliadhna ir trí fíciṽ **agus** (ar) ré **céad** **agus** (ar) míle.

519 A.D., aoir **ṽo'n** tigeapna cúig **céad** **agus** naoi **deas**.

52,000 of the Roman army, **ṽá** míle **deas** ir **ṽá** fíciṽ míle **de** flua **Rómánac**.

**More** than 400 years, tuille(αὐ) (bṛeir) ἄγυρ  
ceitpe céad bliadain.

**About** 80, tuairim le (or timcheall le) ceitpe fich.

„ 1ṛ „ „ 1ṛ „ „

The word *rlige* is often added to make it clear that *miles* not *thousands* is meant. Sé míle *rlige*, or *ré míle* [oe] *rlige*, *six miles*.

**503.** The initials of the numerals undergo the very same changes with regard to aspiration and eclipsis as a noun would in the same position.

**504.** The article prefixes τ to *donmāð*, first, and to *oðtmāð*, eighth, whether the following noun be masculine or feminine: as,

an τ-oðtmāð *bean*, the eighth woman.

### Initial Changes produced by the Numerals.

**505.** *Don*, one; *ṽá*, two; *ceuo*, first; and *treap*, third, aspirate the initial of the following word: as,

*don ṽó amáin*, one cow; *an ceuo fear*, the first man.

**506.** *Don*, prefixes τ to the letter *r*; but has no effect on *o* or *t*: *don apal amáin*, one ass; *don cor amáin*, one foot; *don tragarτ amáin*, one priest; *don trlat amáin*, one rod; *don treabac amáin*, one hawk; *ṽá fearbac*, two hawks; *don taob amáin*, one side.

**507.** *Seacht*, seven; *oðt*, eight; *naoi*, nine; and *deic*, ten; and their compounds eclipse the initial

of the following noun and prefix *n* to vowels; *reáct mba*, seven cows; *veic n-uála*, ten apples.

508. *Trí*, *ceitpe*, *cúig* and *ré* have usually no effect on consonants (except *ceuo*, 100, and *míle*, 1000); but *trí*, *ceitpe*, *ré*, and *ṽapa* prefix *n* to vowels: as, *trí ba*, three cows; *trí n-apail*, three asses; *ré n-uála*, six apples; *'ran ṽapa n-áit*, in the second place; *trí ceuo*, 300; *ceitpe míle*, 4000.

*Trí*, *ceitpe*, *cúig* and *ré* (as well as *reáct*, *oét*, &c.), cause eclipsis in the genitive plural: *ḁ bean na ṽtrí mbó*. *O woman of three cows!* *luac ceitpe bpúnt* *four pound's worth*.

#### The Number of the Noun after the Numerals.

509. The noun after *ḁon* is always in the singular, even in such numbers as 11, 21, 31, 41, &c. The other numerals (except *ṽá*) may take the singular number when unity of idea is expressed: *e.g.*, *ḁon uball véas*, *eleven apples*; *ṽearmad ré ar na trí buille 'bualad*. *He forgot to strike the three blows*.

510. When a noun has two forms in the plural, a short form and a long one, the short form is preferred after the numerals: as

*naoi n-uairpe*, nine times; not *naoi n-uairpeannta*.

511. In Modern Irish the numerals *rice*, 20; *ṽá fíctio*, 40, &c., *ceuo*, 100; *míle*, 1,000, are regarded as simple numeral adjectives which take the noun after them in the singular number.



512. This peculiar construction has arisen from the fact that these numerals are really *nouns*, and formerly governed the nouns after them in the *genitive plural*. As the genitive plural of most Irish nouns has exactly the same form as the nominative singular, the singular form has come to be almost universally used in Modern Irish after these numerals. Formerly they would use *ceuo ban* and *rice caoraic*, but now we use *ceuo bean* and *rice caora*.

513. The word *ceann* and its plural *cinn* are often used with numerals *when the noun is not expressed in English*: as, *Ca meuo (an'mó) leabhar agat?* *Tá ós ceann deus agam.* How many books have you? I have twelve.

*Tá ceann (or duine) aca iní an tíg.*  
There is one of them in the house.

### The Dual Number.

514. *Óa*, "two," always takes the noun after it in the dual number (neither singular nor plural), which in every Irish noun has the same form as the dative singular. This does not at all imply that the noun after *óa* is in the dative case. It is in the *dative singular form*, but it may be in any of the five cases, according to its use in the sentence. All the cases of the dual number are alike, but the form of the *genitive plural* is often used for the *genitive dual*: *óa buin*, two cows; *óa gabainn*, two smiths; *lán a óa lámh* or *lán a óa lámh*, the full of his two hands.

**515.** The article which qualifies a noun in the dual number will always be in the singular form.

**516.** The adjective which qualifies a noun in the dual number will be in the plural form, but really in the dual number; the pronouns belonging to the noun will be in the plural form; and the verb may, but need not be; because in these parts of speech the dual number and the plural number have the same forms.

**517.** The initial of an adjective\* qualifying and agreeing with a noun in the dual number will be aspirated, no matter what the gender or case of the noun may be: as,

ဝံၤ တိၣ်ၣ် ဝဲၣ်ၣ်,	twelve houses.
ၣ်ၣ် ဝံၤ လံၣ်ၣ် ဝံၤၣ်,	the two white hands.
လံၣ် ၤ ဝံၤ လံၣ်ၣ် ဝဲၣ်ၣ်,	the full of her two little hands.

**518.** The ဝ of ဝံၤ is usually aspirated, except after words ending in ဝ, ဂ, င, ဖ, ဖ (dentals), or after the possessive adjective ၤ, her.

ၤ ဝံၤ ငဝ်ၣ် ဝဲၣ်ၣ်,      her two little feet.

---

\*Except demonstrative, possessive, indefinite, and interrogative adjectives.

### The Possessive Adjective.

519. A possessive adjective can never be used without a noun: as, her father and his, *Δ η-αταρ αγυρ Δ αταρ*.

520. The possessive adjectives always precede their nouns: as, *mo μάταρ*, my mother.

521. The possessives *mo*, my; *το*, thy; and *Δ*, his, aspirate the initial of their nouns; *αρ*, our; *βυρ*, your; and *Δ*, their, cause eclipsis: as, *Δ τᾶν*, his poem; *το μάταρ*, thy mother; *Δ τᾶν*, her poem; *Δ νοᾶν*, their poem.

522. If a noun begins with a vowel, *mo*, my, and *το*, thy, become *m'* and *τ'* (τ or τ'); *Δ*, his, has no effect; *Δ*, her, prefixes *η*; and *Δ*, their, prefixes *η*; *αρ*, our, and *βυρ*, your, also prefix *η* to vowels: as, *Δ αταρ*, his father; *Δ η-αταρ*, her father; *Δ η-αταρ*, their father; *μ'φear*, my husband; *τ'eun*, your bird; *αρ η-απᾶν ταεταματ*, our daily bread; *βυρ η-αβᾶν*, your song.

523. The possessive adjectives, when compounded with prepositions (see par. 186), have the same influence over the initials of their nouns as they have in their uncompounded state: as, *τομ μάταρ*, to my mother; *ομ τῖρ*, from my country.

524. When the portion of a thing which belongs to one or more persons is to be expressed by the possessive adjectives, the name of the thing is preceded by *curo*, with the possessive adjective before it. The name of the thing is in the genitive case—genitive singular if *quantity* be implied, but genitive plural if *number*—as, my bread, *mo curo aráin* (lit. my share of bread); his wine, *a curo fíona*; their horses, *a gcuro capall*.

This rule is not always followed; for instance, we sometimes find *m'fíon*, my wine; but *mo curo fíona* is more idiomatic.

525. The word *curo* is never used in this way before the name of a single object.

*mo leabhar*, my book; *a gcapall*, their horse.

*a leabhar*, his book; but *a curo leabhar*, his books.

*a bó*, her cow; *a curo bó*, her cows.

526. The word *curo* is not used in such phrases as *mo cora*, my feet; *mo fúile*, my eyes; *a cnáma*, his bones, &c.

527. When the emphatic suffix is used, some make it follow *curo*; others make it follow the noun: as, *mo curo-re aráin* or *mo curo aráin-re*.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE PRONOUN.

## Personal Pronoun.

528. The personal pronouns agree with the nouns for which they stand in gender, number and person: as, He is a big man. *Is mór an fear é.* They are big men. *Is mór na fir iad.*

529. A personal pronoun which stands for a noun the gender of which is different from its sex, agrees in gender with the sex of the noun; as, *Is maí an cailín í.* She is a good girl. *Is olc an comurra é.* He is a bad neighbour.

530. In Irish we have no neuter pronoun corresponding to the English "it;" hence, in translating "it," we must determine the gender of the Irish noun (masculine or feminine) and then use *é* (he) or *í* (she) accordingly:\* as, It is terrible weather. *Is caillte an aimsir í.* Is to-day Friday? *An í an Aoine atá againn?* 'Tis í an fírinne í. It was the truth. *Tá an carúr agam, ní fuil ré tim.* I have the hammer, it is not heavy.

---

\* The word *áit* although feminine takes sometimes a masculine pronoun, as, *Is fear an áit é.* It is a nice place.

Notice also—

*Is é* )  
     or ) *mo bairnéil, mo tuairim, &c.* It is my opinion, &c., &c.  
*Is í* )

531. The pronoun *τú*, thou, is always used to translate the English "you" when only one person is referred to; as, How are you? *Clonnar tá τú?* What a man you are! *Naé τú an fear!*

532. The personal pronouns, whether nominative or accusative, always come after the verb; as, *molann ré τú*, he praises you.

533. The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are used immediately after the verb 1S in any of its forms expressed or understood; as, *ir é an fear láidir é*. He is a strong man. *An é a fuair é?* Was it he who found it? *Naé í v' ingean í?* Is she not your daughter?

534. A personal pronoun which stands for a sentence, or part of a sentence, is third person singular, masculine gender. *An fuo adubairt mé, ir é adairim air*. What I said, I repeat.

535. The accusative personal pronoun usually comes last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs: as, *'O'fás ré ar an áit rin iad*. He left them at that place. *Rug ré leir míle eile é*. He brought it with him another mile. *'O'fásar im óiad é*. I left it after me.

### Relative Pronoun.

536. The relative particle follows its antecedent and precedes its verb: as, *an fear a coitlocar*, the man who will sleep.



537. The relative particle, whether expressed or understood, always causes aspiration : as, an fear fear ag obair, the man who will be at work.

538. The relative when preceded by a preposition causes eclipsis (unless the verb be in the Past Tense). When the relative a signifies "all that" or "what" it causes eclipsis : as, an áit i n-a bfuil ré, the place in which he is ; a bfuil i mBairle-Áta-Cúat, all that is in Dublin.

539. When the relative is governed by a preposition and followed by a verb in the Past Tense, the relative combines with ro (the old sign of the Past Tense), and does not eclipse : an áit ar tuir Aoð, the place where (in which) Hugh fell.

540. The eight verbs which do not admit of the compounds of ro being used before them (see par. 279) form an exception to the last rule : as, an tír i n-a dtáinig ré, the country into which he came.

541. In English, when the relative or interrogative pronoun is governed by a preposition, the pronoun very often comes before the governing word : as, *What are you speaking about ? The man that he gave the book to is here.* In colloquial Irish it is a very common practice to separate the relative particle from the preposition which governs it ; but instead of using a simple preposition at the end of the sentence, as in English, we use a **prepositional pronoun**. Thus we

can say—*an fear a bfuil an bó*, or more usually, *an fear a bfuil an bó aige*,\* the man who has the cow; *an fear ar díolair an capall leir*, or *an fear leir díolair an capall*, the man to whom I sold the horse.

**542.** The forms *darb* or *darab*, *darb*, *leirb*, *marb*, &c., are compounds of a preposition, relative particle; “*ro*,” the sign of the Past Tense; and *ba* or *buib* the Past Tense of *ir*.

*darb* = *ro + a + ro + ba* = to whom was.

*leirb* = *le + a + ro + ba* = with or by whom was.

as, *bean darb ainm Brigid*, a woman whose name was Brigid.

**543.** As the accusative case of the relative particle has exactly the same form as the nominative, the context must determine, in those tenses in which the verb has no distinct termination for the relative, whether the relative particle is the subject or object of the verb; *an fear a buail Seagán*, may mean, The man whom John struck, or The man who struck John.

### Translation of the Genitive Case of the English Relative.

**544.** The Irish relative has no inflection for case; hence, in order to translate the English word “whose”

---

\* *An fear go bfuil an bó aige* is also used.

when not an interrogative, we must use one of the prepositions (Δ, το, ι) + relative particle + possessive adjective (before the noun).

The man whose son was sick.

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{το} \delta \\ \Delta \zeta \delta \\ \iota \text{ n-}\delta \end{array} \right\} \text{παρθ} \delta \text{ mac tinn.}$$

but τοδ, Δζδ, or 'ζδ, ι n-δ are often shortened to δ, ζο, and 'να; hence the above sentence in colloquial Irish would be—

$$\text{an fear} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \delta \\ \zeta \omicron \\ ' \text{να} \end{array} \right\} \text{παρθ} \delta \text{ mac tinn.}$$

The woman whose son is sick visited us yesterday.

$$\text{an bean} \text{ úr} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \zeta \omicron \\ ' \zeta \delta \\ \&c. \end{array} \right\} \text{b'fuil} \delta \text{ mac tinn} \text{ táinig} \text{ pí} \\ \text{ar éuairt inoé éuzaimn.}$$

545. To translate the English relative pronoun when governed by an active participle, we employ a somewhat similar construction; as—

The hare that the hounds are pursuing.

Δn ζιηηφιαδ ζο b'fuil na ζαδαιη αρ δ λοηζ (or αρ δ τóη, or Δζ τóηαιζεαδτ αιη).

The man whom I am striking.

Δn fear ατδ Δζαη 'δ (το'δ, ζδ) βυαλαδ.

546. The relative *Δ* meaning *all that, what*, may itself be genitive; as, τριαν *Δ* τριῶν ann, a third of what were there. “*Beir beannaḁt óm éporḁe cum Δ maireann ar bânchoic Éireann óig.*” “Bear a blessing from my heart to all those who live on the fair hills of Holy Ireland.”

The relative *Δ* in this sentence is genitive case being governed by *cum* (see par. 603).

---

## CHAPTER V.

---

### The Verb.

547. As a general rule the verb precedes its nominative: as, τᾱ *ré*, he is; *bí* an fear ann, the man was there.

**Exceptions.** (1) When the subject is a relative or an interrogative pronoun the verb comes after its subject; as,

An buaḁaill *Δ* buaitear mé. The boy who strikes me.  
 Cáo *atá* *Δ*ḡat? What have you?

(2) In a relative sentence the nominative though not a relative pronoun may precede its verb; but as the noun is usually far separated from the verb, a

personal pronoun is used as a sort of temporary subject, so that really the noun and its pronoun are nominative to the same verb: as,

An fear atá 'na fearaí ag an doras buail ré an capall. The man who is standing at the door struck the horse.

Compare the similar use of the French pronoun *on*; or the English "He that shall persevere unto the end, *he* shall be saved."

(3) The nominative often precedes its verb in poetry, and sometimes even in prose.

Rat go raib ort! Success to you!

**548. Transitive verbs govern the accusative case; and the usual order of words is, Verb, Subject, Object.** When the subject or object is a relative or an interrogative pronoun it precedes the verb.

Do sinne Seagán an báir ain. John made that boat.

Do buail an buachaill é. The boy struck him.

For the conditions under which a verb is aspirated or eclipsed, see pars. 21(g) and 26(e).

### Use of the Subjunctive Mood.

**549. The most frequent use of the present subjunctive is with the conjunction *go*, expressing a wish. If the wish be negative use *nár* (except with *raib*).**

So mbeannuigibh Dia dhuit !	May God bless you !
So b'fóiribh Dia orainn !	God help us !
So tóisibh tú slán !	Safe home ! (may you go safely) !
Náir léigibh Dia rin !	May God not allow that ! God forbid !
So raibh maith agat !	Thank you !
Ná raibh maith agat !	No thanks to you !

**550.** The subjunctive is also used after **nó so**, **so** or **acht so**, all meaning "until"; and after **muna**, "unless," but only when there is an element of doubt.

Fan ann go dtagad again.	Stay here till I come again.
Muna gcreidibh sib mé.	Unless you believe me.
Muna dtugaidh tú an t-airgead dom.	Unless you give me the money.

**551.** **sul a**, **sul fa**, **sul má**, **sul dá**, all meaning "before," when used with reference to an event not considered as an actual occurrence, take the subjunctive; as,

Imtigh leat rui a dtugaidh an maistrigh.	Be off with you, before the master comes.
--	---

**552.** The past subjunctive is found after **dá** or **muna** to express a supposed condition. They may also take a conditional. In translating the English phrases "if he believed," "if he had believed" (im-



plying that he did not believe), we use *ṛa* with the past subjunctive; but as this Tense is identical in form with the Imperfect Tense, it may be said that it is the Imperfect Tense which is employed in this case.

If you were to see Donal on the following day  
you would pity him.

*Ṭá bpeicteá Domnall ar maidin lá ar n-a bárad  
baó truaḡ leat é.*

If you were to give me that book.

*Ṭá otuḡtá-ra dompa an leabhar rin.*

If it were true for him. *Ṭá mbaó fíor dó é.*

All the particles given above can also be used with the past subjunctive in reference to past time.

**553.** In the passive voice the present and past subjunctive are identical in form with the Present and Imperfect Tenses (respectively) of the Indicative Mood.

May it be worn out well. *ḡo ḡcaittear ḡo maic é.*

May it never be worn out. *náir cáittear ḡo veo é.*

If it were worn out. *Ṭá ḡcaitti é.*

### Relative Form of the Verb.

**554.** The relative form of the verb is used after the relative particle *a*, *when it is the subject of the verb*; (but never after the negative relative *na*, *which* or *who...not*). It has a distinct form in two, and only

two, Tenses—the *Present* and the *Future*. In these two Tenses it ends in *ar* or *ear*. In all the other Tenses the third person singular is used after the relative pronoun. The verb is aspirated after the relative, expressed or understood ; but *naé* eclipses.

555. The inflection of the relative form in *present* tense is not used in the spoken Language of to-day (except in proverbs). In Connaught the final *r* of the relative form is added to the form for the 3rd person singular ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaiteannr*, *the man who strikes* ; *an buacail a tuigeannr*, *the boy who understands*. The literary form of the relative in the *future* tense is retained in full vigour in Connaught ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaifear*, *the man who will strike*. In Munster the relative form has entirely disappeared in both the present and the future tenses (except in proverbs). The 3rd person singular form has taken its place ; *e.g.*, *an fear a buaiteann*, *the man who strikes*.

556. As the relative has no inflection for case, ambiguity sometimes arises : *e.g.*, *an fear a buaít Seagán*, may mean, either *the man who struck John*, or, *the man whom John struck*. The context usually solves the difficulty. The following construction is sometimes employed in order to obviate any ambiguity :—

<i>An fear a buaít Seagán.</i>	The man who struck John.
<i>An fear gur buaít Seagán é.</i>	The man whom John struck.

557. *Cionnur*, how ; *nuair*, when ; and *mar*, as, are followed by the relative form of the verb in the *Present* and *Future*, and the verb is aspirated ; but with *cionnur a*, *cia an éadai*, *cia an nóir*, *cia an moib*, or any

other such locutions, the eclipsing  $\Delta$  or  $\iota$  (*in which*) is used before the verb. Before the Past Tense, of course,  $\Delta\pi$  ( $\Delta + \pi o$ ) is used.  $\text{Cionnur } \Delta \text{ } \text{b}^{\text{p}}\text{uit } \tau\acute{u}$ ? How are you?

$\text{Map}$  is also followed by the ordinary Present and Future.

**558.**  $\text{Sul}$ , "before," has two usages. It may be followed by the relative forms—*e.g.*,  $\text{put } \text{tiocpar } \text{ré}$ ,  $\text{put } \text{táinig } \text{ré}$ ; or else it may be followed by one of the particles  $\Delta$ ,  $\text{m}\Delta$ ,  $\text{f}\Delta$ ,  $\text{o}\Delta$ , all of which eclipse.

**559.** After these particles, the Subjunctive Mood is often used when the event is future and uncertain, or contains a mental element: as—

$\text{Imtíg } \text{teat } \text{put } \Delta \text{ } \text{b}^{\text{p}}\text{eicir} \text{ } \text{ré } \text{t}\acute{u}$ .

Be off (with you) before he sees you (*i.e.*, so that he may not see you).

It is not correct to eclipse after the word  $\text{put}$ , as  $\text{put } \text{o}\text{táinig}$ , although sometimes done.

**560.** The relative form of the Present Tense is frequently used as a historic present, even when no relative occurs in the sentence: as—

$\text{Noctar } \text{Eipemón } \text{oóib}$ , Eremon revealed to them.

## The Verbal Noun and its Functions.

561. "Is there an Infinitive in Irish?" We give here Father O'Leary's answer to his own question, "Certainly not." In Irish there is neither an infinitive mood nor a present participle, both functions being discharged by the verbal noun. It follows from this statement that *there is no such thing as a sign of the infinitive mood in Irish.*

Ír maic liom siubal.	I wish to walk.
Dubhar leis gan teacht.	I told him not* to come.
Tá orm a feiceam.	I have to wait.
Níor maic liom bean-nuagad úd.	I did not wish to salute him.
Ní cís le mála folam gearam.	An empty bag cannot stand.

562. In the above examples, and in thousands of similar ones, *the Irish verbal noun is an exact equivalent in sense of the English infinitive, sign and all.* If any one of the prepositions *do* (or *a*), *le* or *cum*, be used before the verbal nouns in the above examples, the result is utter nonsense. Now consider the following examples:—

Ír maic liom an bócar do siubal.	I wish to walk the road.
Ír maic liom focal do labairt.	I wish to speak a word.

---

\* Not before the English infinitive is translated by *gan* (a prep., without).

Dubairt m'atair liom gan an capall do díol.	My father told me not to sell the horse.
Ir cóir duit an feur do baint.	You ought to cut the grass.
An féidir leat an caint do thuiscint?	Can you understand the conversation?
Ir mian liom litir do rṡríobad.	I wish to write a letter.

**563.** The *preposition* do in the above examples and ones like them between the noun and the verbal noun, is very often, in the spoken language, softened to a: and this a is not heard before or after a vowel: as,

Ir cóir duit comairle 'ḡlacad.

You ought to take advice.

**564.** In any sentence of the first set of examples there is question of only one thing; e.g., riubal, teacht, reiteam, &c., but in each of the sentences of the second set *there is a relation between two things*: e.g., bótar and riubal, focal and labairt, &c., and to express this relationship a *preposition is used between the two nouns*. If the relation between the nouns be altered the preposition must also be altered, as—

Tá bótar agam le riubal,	I have a road to walk.
Tá focal agam le labairt,	I have a word to say.
Tá capall agam le díol,	I have a horse for sale (to sell).
Tá feur agat le baint,	You have grass to cut.

**565.** There is still another preposition which can be used between the nouns to express another alteration in meaning—

TÁ teac cum comnuigte I have a house to live in.  
agam.

TÁ capall cum mapcuig- He has a horse to ride on.  
eacta aige.

If in any one of these sentences the wrong preposition be employed the proper meaning cannot be expressed.

**566.** In translating the simple English infinitive of an intransitive verb, use the simple verbal noun in Irish: as,

He told me to go to Cork. Dubairt ré liom dul go  
Corcaig.

An empty bag cannot stand. ní tís le mála folam  
seam.

It is impossible to write without learning. ní féidir scríobadh gan  
foghlaim.

I prefer to walk. is fearr liom siubal.

He cannot stand. ní tís leir seam.

Tell him to sit down. Abair leir siúil ríor.

Tell them to go away. Abair leo imteacht.



**567. When the English intransitive infinitive expresses purpose (i.e., the gerundial infinitive), use the preposition *le*.**

He came to stay,      *Ĉáinig ré le fanamaint.*

I have a word to say,      *Ṭá focal agam le labhairt.*

You are to wait,      *Ṭá tú le feiteam.*

I am to go,      *Ṭáim le dul.*

**568. When the English verb is transitive and in the simple infinitive (no purpose implied) use the preposition *do* or the softened form *a*.**

My father told me to buy      *Dubhairt m'átair liom*  
a horse.      *capall do ceannad.*

You ought to have cut      *Ba chóir duit an fear do*  
the grass.      *dhaint.*

He told me not to shut      *Dubhairt ré liom gan an*  
the door.      *doir do dhúnao.*

Would you like to read      *An mian leat an leabhar*  
this book?      *ro do léigeat?*

**569. When the English infinitive is transitive, and also expresses purpose, use either *cun* or *le* before the noun which is the object of the English infinitive, and *do* before the verbal noun in Irish; *cun* takes**

the noun after it in the genitive; *te* becomes *leir* before the article, and then causes eclipsis if the noun be singular.

He will come to judge the living and the dead.	Tiocfaid Sé cum bpeit- eamhair do tabairt ar beodaib agur ar marb- aib.
He came to buy a horse.	Táinig ré le capall do ceannaic.
He went to strike the men.	Cuaird ré cun na bpean do bualaic.
He went to strike the man.	Cuaird ré leir an bpean do bualaic.
He said that to praise the girl.	Dubairt ré rin leir an gcailin do molaic.
He came to buy the horse.	Táinig ré cum an capall a ceannaic.

**570.** We can also express the above by means of the preposition *do* alone, but in this case we must put the verbal noun before the other noun. This latter will, of course, be now in the genitive case, because one noun governs another in the genitive case. This is the *only governing power the verbal noun has in Irish*.

He came to buy the horse.	Táinig ré do ceannaic an capall.
He went to strike the man.	Cuaird ré do bualaic an fip.

Did you come to strike John?	An tórángair do bualaó Seagáin?
He came to make fun.	Táinig ré do deunam spinn.
They came to make war.	Tángthadar do deunam cogairó.

N.B.—This latter method is not often used in the spoken language.

**571. When the English infinitive is passive, and also expresses purpose, use *le*.**

He is to be hanged.	Tá ré le croctáó, or le beit crocta.
The milk is to be drunk.	Tá an bainne le h-ól (&c.).
Cows are to be bought at the fair.	Tá ba le ceannaó ar an aonac.
The grass is to be cut.	Tá an feur le baint.
The house is to be sold.	Tá an teac le díol.
There is no one to be seen on the road.	Ní fuil duine ar bit le feicint ar an mbótar.

**572. When a personal pronoun is the object of the English infinitive and the latter does not express purpose, we translate as follows:—**

You ought not to strike me.	{ Ní cóir duit mé do bualaó. Ní cóir duit mo bualaó.
I wished to strike him.	{ Ba mian liom é do bualaó. Ba mian liom a bualaó.

- I wish to praise her. { 1ṛ mian liom i vo molað.  
 { 1ṛ mian liom a molað.
- It is not right to strike { ḥi cōṛ 1aṭ vo bualað.  
 them. { ḥi cōṛ a mbualað.
- It is a bad thing to wound { 1ṛ olc an ruṭ mé vo  
 me. { ḡonað.  
 { 1ṛ olc an ruṭ mo ḡonað.
- I cannot understand it. ḥi tiḡ liom a tuḡṛint  
 (its understanding).
- Could you tell me who it An řeṭṭiṛ leaṭ a\* innṛint  
 was? voṃ cia 'ṛḃ'é?
- A desire to kill them came Ṭáimḡ mian a maṛḃṭa  
 upon me. oṛmṛa.

In this sentence maṛḃṭa is the genitive case (after the noun mian) of the verbal noun maṛḃaṭ.

**573. When the English infinitive governing a personal pronoun expresses purpose, we translate as follows:—**

- He came to strike me. { Ṭáimḡ řé voṃ bualað.  
 { Ṭáimḡ řé le mé vo bualað.
- I went to strike them. { Čuaṛḃ mé ṭ'a mbualað.  
 { Čuaṛḃ mé le ḥ-1aṭ vo  
 bualað.

---

\* Whenever the object of the verbal noun is a phrase, it cannot be put in the genitive case, but the possessive adjective a is used before the verbal noun.

They are coming to wound us.	{ Tá riad ag teacht uain ngonad. { Tá riad ag teacht le rinn do gonad.
---------------------------------	---

If we used the autonomous form in this last sentence we would get—

They are coming to wound us.	{ Tátar ag teacht uain ngonad. { Tátar ag teacht le rinn do gonad.
---------------------------------	---

574. The English present participle is usually translated by the verbal noun preceded by the preposition *ag*. If the English present participle expresses "rest" (*e.g., standing, sitting, lying, sleeping, &c.*), the verbal noun must be preceded by the preposition *i* (=in) compounded with a suitable possessive adjective (§ 186).

Tá riad ag teacht.

They are coming.

Ói an buachaill 'na fearaí.

The boy was standing.

Tá an bean na fearaí.

The woman is standing.

575. The verbal noun in each of the above is dative case, governed by the preposition *ag*.

576. When the English present participle governs an objective case, the object if a noun will follow the verbal noun in Irish and will be in the genitive case.

He is cutting the grass.

Tá sé ag baint an féir.

She was stretching out her  
hand.

Ói sí ag rincead a láimhe  
amaí.

Are you reading the letter?    Æfuit tú æg léigeadó na  
litre?

Who was beating the child?    Cía bí æg buataó an leinb?

**577. If the object of the English present participle be a personal pronoun we cannot translate as in the above sentences, because the pronouns have no genitive case; hence instead of using the personal pronouns we must employ the possessive adjectives. Possessive adjectives must always precede the nouns which they qualify.**

He is striking me.                    Tá ré 'gám (or ægom)  
   buataó (lit. he is at my  
   beating).

Are you breaking it?                Æfuit tú 'gá (æga)  
   bpipeadó?

Are you breaking them?            Æfuit tú 'gá (æga) mbpipe-  
   eadó?

He is praising us.                    Tá ré gár (æg ár) molaó

Is he not burning them?            Nac æfuit ré 'gá (æga)  
   noógaó?

They are not striking her.        Ní fuit ríad 'gá (æga)  
   buataó.

Note carefully the initial effects of the possessive adjectives on the verbal nouns after them.



**578. Preceded by *ar*, the Verbal Noun has the force of a Present Participle Passive, denoting a continued or habitual state : as,**

ní fuil an teanga rin ar      That language is not  
labairt anois.                      spoken now.

Tá an éruit ar crodaó ar      The harp is hanging on  
an ngéig.                              the bough.

Sgeul ar leanamaint.              A continued story.

In this idiom *ar* neither aspirates nor eclipses.

**579. With *iar*, *after* (eclipsing), the Verbal Noun has the force of a Perfect Participle : as,**

iar tceadt i n-Éirinn do pádraig,  
Patrick having come into Ireland.

But in this idiom *iar* is usually shortened to *ar*: as, *ar tceadt*, &c., the eclipsis being retained. In colloquial language the Verbal Noun is commonly aspirated, not eclipsed, by *ar* in this usage.

**580. *San* is the word used to express negation with the Verbal Noun : as, *san tceadt*, not to come.**

Abair le Brian san an goirt do tpeadaó.  
Tell Brian not to plough the field.

**581. *San* with the Verbal Noun has the force of the Passive Participle in English with *un* prefixed: as,**

Mo cúig púint oina aghur iad san rníom,  
My five pounds of wool, and they *unspun*.

**582.** The genitive of the Verbal Noun is often used where a relative or infinitive clause would be used in English: as,

Níor fágáð fear inniúte ríéil,  
There was not a man left *to tell the tidings*.

Caitín deap epúiríte na mbó,  
The pretty girl *who milks* the cows (lit. of the milking, &c.).

**583.** The following examples will be studied with advantage. They are culled from Father O'Leary's *Míon-Éaint* :—

Someone is striking me.      Tátar 'gáam bualað.

I am being struck.      Táim dom bualað.

Someone is striking the dog.      Tátar ag bualað an gáðair.

The dog is being struck.      Tá an gáðair dá bualað.

Someone is breaking the stones.      Tátar ag bpiúeáð na gcloé.

The stones are being broken.      Tá na cloéa dá mbpiúeáð.

They used to kill people.      Bítí ag marbáð daoine.

People used to be killed.      Bíoð daoine dá marbáð.

They used to buy horses.      Bítí ag ceannaé capall.

Horses used to be bought.      Bíoð capall dá gceannaé.

We (or they) will be digging potatoes.	Beirfeadh as baint prátaí.
Potatoes will be dug.	Beir prátaí dá mbaint.
We shall have dug the potatoes.	Beir na prátaí bainte asainn.
If they were breaking stones they would not be cold.	Dá mbéirfeadh as bpreadh cloch ní beirfeadh fuar.
If they are breaking stones they are not cold.	Má tá siad as bpreadh cloch ní fuarfeadh fuar.

### THE VERB IS.

**584. A definite noun is one limited by its nature or by some accompanying word to a definite individual or group.**

**The following are definite nouns:—**

- (a) The name of a person or place (but not a class name like *Sáranac*).
- (b) A noun preceded by the definite article.
- (c) A noun preceded by a demonstrative adjective.
- (d) A noun preceded by *sí* (because it means each taken individually).
- (e) A noun followed by any other definite noun in the genitive case.

**Any noun not included in the above classes is an indefinite noun.**

**585. Whenever a definite noun is the subject of a verb in English, and the verb *is* is employed in translating into Irish, a personal pronoun must immediately precede the definite noun in Irish.**

John is the man. *Is é Seán an fear*

### WHEN TO USE THE VERB *IS*.

**586. (a) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by a definite noun, use *is* : as,**

I am John.	<i>Is m'ise Seán.</i>
It is the man.	<i>Is é an fear é.</i>
You are my brother.	<i>Is tú mo bheirbrátair.</i>
James is the man.	<i>Is é Seumas an fear.</i>
It is the woman of the house.	<i>Is í bean an tíse í.</i>
Are you not my friend?	<i>Náé tú mo cara?</i>
He is not my father.	<i>Ní h-é m'athair.</i>

All sentences of this class are called "**Identification sentences.**"

He, she and they in sentences of identity have usually the force of demonstrative pronouns, and are translated by *é sin*, *í sin*, *iad sin*.

**(b) When the verb "to be" in English is followed by an indefinite noun *is* or *tá* may be used, but with very different meanings. Whenever we use the verb *is* in such a sentence we convey the idea of "classification," or *species* : as, *Is***

áinníge bó. A cow is an animal, &c.; or we *lay stress on what the person or thing is at the time being*, without any thought that he has become what he, or it, is. For instance, a father, enumerating to a friend the various positions in life of his children, may say, *ir ceannuirde Seumair, ir ragarc Seagán, agus ir fear olige Mícheál*: James is a merchant, John a priest, and Michael is a lawyer. He should not use *τá* in such a case, as he considers simply what each is at the time being. When *τá* is used we convey the idea that the person or thing *has become* what he (or it) is, *and that he (or it) was not always so*. Suppose a father is telling what professions his sons have adopted, he should say, *τá Seumair 'na ceannuirde, &c.* In such constructions the verb *τá* must be followed by the preposition *í* or *a*, and a suitable possessive adjective.

(c) The difference between *τá* and *ir* is well exemplified by the two sentences *ir fear é* and *τá ré 'na fear*, both meaning "He is a man." If we see a figure approach us in the dark, and after looking closely at it we discover it to be a man, our correct phraseology would then be, *ir fear é*. But when we say *τá ré 'na fear* we convey a very different idea. We mean that the person of whom we are speaking is no longer a boy, he has now reached manhood. If anyone were speaking to you of a person as if he were a mere boy, and you wished to correct him, you should use the phrase *τá ré 'na fear*.

(d) When the indefinite noun after the verb "to be" in English is qualified by an adjective, the verb *ir* or *τá* may be used according to the idea we wish to convey. If we wish to express a "condition sentence" (*i.e.*, one which has reference to the state or condition of the subject at the time in question), we use *τá*; otherwise we employ *ir*, *e.g.*,

He is a small man.      *Τά ρέ 'να fear beas.*

He is a useful man.      *Τά ρέ 'να fear fóganta.*

She was a good woman      *Ói pí 'na mnaoi maic.*

(e) When the verb *ir* is employed in such sentences *there is a choice of two constructions*. In the second construction (as given in the examples below), we emphasise the adjective, by making it the prominent idea of the sentence. The definite article must be used in the second construction.

*ir lá breáḡ é.*      }  
*ir breáḡ an lá é.*      } It is a fine day.

*ir oirðce fuar í.*      }  
*ir fuar an oirðce í.*      } It is a cold night.

*ir bó breáḡ í rin.*      }  
*ir breáḡ an bó í rin.*      } That is a fine cow.

*Naḡ oileán fear é rin?*      }  
*Naḡ fear an t-oileán é rin?*      } Isn't that a pretty island?



(f) When a simple adjective follows the verb "to be" in English, either *is* or *isn't* may be employed in translating, as,

Honey is sweet, *is* *mil* *mil* or *isn't* *mil* *mil*.

He is strong, *is* *láir* *é* or *isn't* *ré* *láir*.

587. The beginning of a sentence is naturally the place of greatest prominence, and is usually occupied in Irish by the verb. When, however, any idea other than that contained in the verb is to be emphasised, it is placed immediately after the verb *is*, and the rest of the sentence is thrown into the relative form.

For example, "We went to Derry yesterday," would be generally translated: *Cuair* *rinn* *go* *Dóine* *inné*: but it may also take the following forms according to the word emphasised.

We went to Derry yester- *is* *rinn* *do* *cuair* *go*  
day. *Dóine* *inné*.

We went to Derry yester- *is* *go* *Dóine* *do* *cuair*  
day. *rinn* *inné*.

We went to Derry yester- *is* *inné* *do* *cuair* *rinn* *go*  
day. *Dóine*.

### 588. The Verb *is* is then used.

- |                          |       |  |
|--------------------------|-------|--|
| (1) To express Identity, | e.g., | <i>is</i> <i>é</i> Conn an <i>pl</i> .   |
| (2) „ Classification,    | „     | <i>is</i> <i>ní</i> Conn.  |
| (3) „ Emphasis,          | „     | <i>is</i> <i>inné</i> <i>do</i> <i>cuair</i><br><i>rinn</i> <i>go</i> <i>Dóine</i> . |

## POSITION OF WORDS WITH IS.

589. The predicate of the sentence always follows IS: as,

Dermot is a man,	1r fear Dármuid.
They are children,	1r páirí 1ao.
John is a priest,	1r rásart Seagán.
Coal is black,	1r dub gual.
A cow is an animal,	1r ainmíge bó.
Turf is not coal,	Ní gual moin.
Is it a man?	An fear é?

590. Sentences of Identification—e.g., *Conn is the king*—form an apparent exception. The fact is that in this sentence either the word “Conn” or “the king” may be the *logical predicate*. In English “king” is the *grammatical predicate*, but in Irish it is the *grammatical subject*, and “Conn” is the *grammatical predicate*. Hence the sentence will be, 1r é Conn an rí.

591. In such sentences, when two nouns or a pronoun and noun are connected by the verb 1r, as a general rule, the more particular and individual of the two is made grammatical predicate in Irish. *The converse usually holds in English*. For instance, we say in English “I am the messenger,” but in Irish 1r mire an teachtair (lit. “the messenger is I”). Likewise with the following:—

You are the man,	1r tú an fear.
He is the master,	1r é rin an maistrir.
We are the boys,	1r rinne na buachaillí.

**592.** Sentences like "It is Donal," "It is the messenger," &c., are translated  $\text{ír é } \text{Domnall é}, \text{ír é an teascáire é}.$  Here " $\text{é Domnall}$ " and " $\text{é an teascáire}$ " are the grammatical predicates, and the second  $\text{é}$  in each case is the subject.

It is the master,  $\text{ír é an maistríur é}.$

He is the master,  $\text{ír é rin an maistríur}.$

(The underlined words are the predicates.)

**593.** In recent times we often find such sentences as " $\text{ír é an maistríur},$ " " $\text{ír é an fear},$ " &c., for "It is the master," "It is the man," in which the last  $\text{é}$ , the subject of the sentence, is omitted.

### Translation of the English Secondary Tenses.

**594.** The English Present Perfect Tense is translated by means of the Present Tense of the verb  $\text{tá},$  followed by  $\text{ó' éir}$  (or  $\text{tar éir}$ ) and the verbal noun. When  $\text{ó' éir}$  comes immediately before the verbal noun, the latter will be in the genitive case; but when  $\text{ó' éir}$  is separated from the verbal noun by the object of the English verb, the verbal noun will be preceded by the preposition  $\text{do},$  and will be dative case.

He wrote,  $\text{Do rḡrṡob ré}.$

He has just written,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir rḡrṡobta}.$

He broke the window,  $\text{Do ḡrṡr ré an fuinneos}.$

He has broken the window,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir na fuinneoisge do ḡrṡreao}.$

He has just died,  $\text{Tá ré ó' éir báir ó' faḡáil}.$

595. The word "*just*" in these sentences is not translated into Irish, and the word after *o' éir* is in the genitive case.

596. When the English verb is transitive there is another very neat method of translating the secondary tenses. As already stated, there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish: its place is supplied by the verb *ṭá* and the preposition *ag*. Thus, "*I have a book*" is, *Ṭá leabhar agam*. A similar construction may be used in translating the secondary tenses of an English transitive verb. The following sentences will illustrate the construction:—

I have written the letter,	<i>Ṭá an litir scríobta agam.</i>
I have struck him,	<i>Ṭá ré buailte agam.</i>
Have you done it yet?	<i>Ófuil ré deunta agat fós?</i>
I have broken the stick,	<i>Ṭá an maide bhrste agam.</i>

597. The English Pluperfect and Future Perfect are translated in the same manner as the Present Perfect, except that the Past and Future Tenses respectively of *ṭá* must be used instead of the Present, as above. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

He died,	<i>fuair ré bár.</i>
He had just died,	<i>Bí ré o' éir bair o' fágáil.</i>
He had broken the chair,	<i>Bí ré o' éir na cathairleac</i>
	<i>do bhréad.</i>
	<i>Bí an cathair bhrste aige.</i>

The window has just been broken by a stone,	{ Táatar 'ó' éir na fuinneoige do b'pnead le cloic.
I had written the letter,	{ B'i an litir r'ghíobta agam. B'ior 'ó' éir na litre do r'ghíobad.
I shall have finished my work before you will be ready,	{ Béad 'ó' éir críce do cur ar mo cur oibre r'ul a mbéir péir (ullam), Béir mo cur oibre críoc- nuigte agam r'ul a mbéir péir.

### Prepositions after Verbs.

598. We give here a few verbs which require a preposition after them in Irish, although they require none in English:—

Seilim do,	I obey.
Umluigim do,	„
Cuidigim le,	I assist.
Innim do, }	I tell.
Deirim le, }	
Tugaim ar,	I persuade, prevail over.
Tugaim fad,	I endeavour.
Iarraim ar,	I ask (beseech).
Fiairnuigim de,	I ask (enquire).
Seallaim do,	I promise.
Beannuigim do,	I salute.

Cuimhnigim ar,	I remember.
Deirim ar,	I catch, I overtake.
Gleupaim ar,	I prepare (gleur ort, get ready).
Leigim do,	I allow, permit.
Comairligim do,	I advise.
Maidim do,	I forgive, pardon.
Freaspaim do,	I answer.
Fóirim ar,	I help.
Eirígeann liom,	I succeed (lit. It arises with me).
Tigim le,	I confirm, I corroborate.
Tig liom	I can.
Sgaoilim do,	I loose.
Impigim ar,	I beg, I beseech.
Taitnígim le,	I please.

**599.** Many verbs require prepositions different from those required by their English equivalents.

Labraim ar,	I speak of.
Fanaim le,	I wait for.
Triáctaim ar,	I treat of.
Ceilim ar,	I conceal from.
Sgapaim le,	I separate from.
Cuirim píos ar,	I send for.
Labraim le,	I speak to.
Deirim le,	I say to.
Ar . . . le,	say, said to (ar is used only in quotation).



Beiríim aghaid ar,	I face (for) (a place).
Deunaim madaid fá,	I make fun of, I mock.
Cruíim fá,	I tremble at.
Bainim le (also do),	I belong to, I appertain to.
Beiríim buaid ar,	I win a victory over.
Táim boðruigte as,	I am bothered with.
Eiríim le,	I listen to.
Dar le,	It seems to.
Glaoiríim ar,	I call for.
Cinnim ar,	I excel or surpass in.
Guiríim ar,	I pray for; also, I beseech. (Guirí oiríinn, pray for us.)
Feud ar,	look at (feud ort, Look at them; feud iad, Examine or try them).
fáigaim rian as,	I bid farewell to.
Leanaim de,	I stick to.
Beiríim ar...ar,	I take hold of...by: as, He caught me by the hand. Rug ré ar lámh oim. Catch her by the hand, Beir ar lámh uirí.
Díolaim le...ar,	I sell to...for. He sold me a cow for £10. Díol ré bó uim ar deic bpúntaib,
Díolaim ar,	I pay for.
Caitim le,	I throw at.
Cromaim ar, toirnuigim ar, luigim ar,	I begin to (do something).

### The Negative Adverb—Not.

600. Young students experience great difficulty in translating the English negative adverb—"not." We here give the various ways of translating "not."

Not, with the Imperative mood, is translated by *ná*.

"	"	Subjunctive	"	"	<i>nár</i> .
"	"	Verbal Noun	"	"	<i>san</i> .
Indicative Mood		Past Tense	{ statement, <i>níor</i> or <i>car</i> question, <i>nár</i> or <i>naçar</i> .		
		All other tenses	{ statement, <i>ní</i> or <i>ca</i> . question, <i>naé</i> , <i>ná</i> .		

"If...not" is translated by *muna* : \* if the verb be in the past tense use *munar*.

All the above forms are used in principal sentences only. In dependent sentences "that...not" is always translated by *naé* or *ná*, except in the past tense, indicative mood, when *nár* or *naçar* must be used.

*ní*, aspirates; *ca*, eclipses. *Cá* becomes *an* before *ir* and *fuil* : e.g., *can mé*, *It is not I*.

How to answer a question. Yes—No.

601. (a) In Irish there are no fixed words for "Yes" or "No." As a general rule in replying to questions, "Yes" or "No" is translated by using the same verb and tense as has been employed in the question.

---

\* Pronounced *morru*.

The subject of the verb used in reply need not be expressed, except when it is contained in the verb ending. In English we frequently use a double reply, as "Yes, I will." "No, I was not," &c. In Irish we use only one reply.

Óruit tú tinn? Táim. Are you sick? Yes, or I am.

Raib ré annsin? Ní raib. Was he there? No.

An bhaca tú Seagán? Did you see John? No.  
Ní faca or ní fadar.

An bhaca ré an teach? Did he see the house?  
Connaic. He did.

An thuigeann tú? Do you understand? Yes  
Tuigim.

An dtiocfaid tú? Will you come? No, I  
ní dtiocfaid. will not.

(b) When the question has been asked with any part of the verb *is*, expressed or understood, followed by a **definite** noun, the English subject must be used in the answer, as also must the verb, except when the answer is negative.

An tú an fear? Ní mhe. Are you the man? No.

Nac é sin an fear? Is é. Is not he the man? Yes,  
he is.

An b'é sin Seagán? Níor Was that John? No, it  
b'é. was not.

Notice also the following:—

FIRST SPEAKER.	SECOND SPEAKER.
<p>1r mipe an teactaire.  <i>I am the messenger.</i></p>	<p>An tú?  <i>Are you?</i></p>
<p>Ní h-é rin ár pascara.  <i>He is not our priest.</i></p>	<p>Ní é?  <i>Isn't he?</i></p>
<p>1r é an fear é.  <i>It is the man.</i></p>	<p>Ní h-é.  <i>It is not.</i></p>

(c) Whenever the question is asked by any part of the verb 1r, followed by an **indefinite** predicate, the word “Yes” is usually translated by repeating the verb and the indefinite predicate, as—

Ná é fuar an lá é? 1r Isn't it a cold day? Yes,  
 fuar. or It is.

Ná maí é? 1r maí. Is it not good? Yes, or  
 It is.

An aige ad an t-airgead? Is it he who has the  
 1r aige. money? Yes.

But in this case the answer may also be correctly given by using the neuter pronoun ead. 1r ead (or 'read) for “yes;” ní h-ead for “no.”

An maí é rin? Ní Is that a dog? No.  
 h-ead.

An Sapanac é? 'Sead. Is he an Englishman?  
 Yes.

Ná maí é? 'Sead. Isn't it good? It is.

(d) When the question is asked with "who" or "what," the subject alone is used in the answer, and if the subject be a personal pronoun the emphatic form will be used, as—

Cia rinne é rin? Míre. Who did that? I did.

## CHAPTER VI.

### The Preposition.

602. As a general rule the simple prepositions govern a dative case, and precede the words which they govern: as,

Ċáinis ré ó Ćorċais. He came from Cork.

Ċus ré an t-uċall 'oo'n He gave the apple to the  
mnaoi. woman.

**Exceptions.** (1) The preposition *roin*, "between," governs the accusative case: as, *roin Ćorċais agus Luimneac*, between Cork and Limerick.

(2) *Go roí*,\* meaning "to" (*motion*), is followed by the nominative case.

Ċuaró ré go roí an teac. He went to the house.

\**Go roí* is really a corrupted form of the old subjunctive mood of the verb *tigim*, I come; so that the noun after *go roí* was formerly nominative case to the verb.

(8) The preposition *gan*, “without,” governs the dative in the singular, but the accusative in the plural: as,

*Tá ré gan céill.*

He is without sense.

*Gan ár gcáirde.*

Without our friends.

603. The words *timcheall* (around),\* *trarna* or *trearna* (across), *coir* (beside), *fas* (along), *cum†* or *cun* (towards), *toirg* (owing to), *dála*, *dálta*, and [*iomtúra*] (as to, or concerning), although really nouns, are used where prepositions are used in English. Being nouns, they are followed by the genitive case.

*Uaill ré fas na rróine é.* He struck him along the nose.

*An mbéid tú ag dul cum an donaig i mbárac?* Will you be going to (towards) the fair tomorrow?

*Do rit ré timcheall na h-áite seo.* He ran around this place.

*Do cuadar trarna an ghuir eorna.* They went across the field of barley.

For the so-called compound prepositions see par. 608, &c.

604. The prepositions *i* (in) and *le* (with) become *inr* and *teir* before the article: e.g., *inr an leabhar* in

\* The meanings given in parenthesis are the usual English equivalents, not the real meaning of the words.

† The *m* in this word is pronounced like *n*.



*the book*; *leir an bprear, with the man*. In Munster *ó* (*from*), *de* (*off, from*), *to* (*to*), *aiġe* (= *as, at, with*), and some others take *r* before the *plural* article—*ó rna fearaib, from the men*; *to rna buaib, to the cows*.

**605. The simple prepositions cause aspiration when the article is not used with them:** as, *Ar bárr an chnuic*. On the top of the hill. *ruair ré ó fear an tġe é*. He got it from the man of the house.

**Exceptions** (1) The prepositions *as, at*; *le, with*; *ar, out*; *go, to*, cause neither aspiration nor eclipsis; as, *Do tuit ré le Goll*. He fell by Goll. *Cuair ré go Baile-Áta-Chiat*. He went to Dublin.

*San, without*, may aspirate or not.

(2) The preposition *í* or *a*, in, causes eclipsis even without the article: as, *Óí ré í ġCorcaġ*. He was in Cork.

**606. The simple prepositions, when followed by the article and a noun in the singular number, usually cause eclipsis:** as, *ar an mbárr*, on the top; *ó 'n bprear*, from the man; *'ran mbaile*, at home.

**Exceptions.** (1) The prepositions *to,\* to*, and *de, of, off, from*, when followed by the article, usually cause aspiration, though in some places eclipsis takes place.

\* *Go* or *go* *uí* is usually used for "to" when *motion to* is implied (the Latin *acc. of motion*). *to* is usually used for "to" when *no motion* is implied (the Latin *dative*).

Aspiration is the more common practice: *ʰoo 'n fɛaɾ*, to the man; *ʰe'n mɪnaɔi*, from the woman. They prefix *ɾ* to *ɾ*; as, *ʰuɣ ɾé ʰoo'n tɾaɣaɾɾɛ é*. He gave it to the priest. *Sa* (= *ɪnɾ an*) usually aspirates in Munster; *ɾa ʰoɾɣa mɔɾ*, *in the big box*.

(2) When *ɣan*, *without*, is followed by the article it produces no change in the initial consonant following: as, *ɣan an ɾion*, without the wine; but if the following noun be masculine and begin with a vowel, or be feminine beginning with *ɾ*, *ɾ* is prefixed: as, *ɣan an ɾ-eun*, without the bird; *ɣan an tɾúit*, without the eye.

In the Northern dialect aspiration takes place after the preposition and the article.

**607.** When a simple preposition ending in a vowel comes before the possessive adjective *Δ* (*his, her, or their*), or the possessive *Δɾ*, *our*, and *ʰuɾ*, *your*, the letter *n* is inserted before the possessive: as, *te n-Δ ɫáim*, by his hand; *tɾé n-Δ mɔɾaɪɔ*, through their palms; *te n-Δɾ ɣcuɪɔ*, with (or by) our portion; *te nʰuɾ ʰtoɪɫ*, with your permission.

Except the prepositions *ʰoo* and *ʰe*, which become *ʰʰ*.

Whenever *ɣo* or *te* comes before any other word beginning with a vowel the letter *n* is usually inserted: as, *ó mɪaɪɔɪn ɣo n-oɪɔ́ce*, from morning till night; *ɣo n-Δɫaɪn*, to Scotland; *te n-eaɣɫa*, with fear. (See par. 29.)

**608.** In Irish certain nouns preceded by prepositions have often the force of English prepositions. As nouns they are, of course, followed by a genitive case, unless a preposition comes between them and the following noun, when the dative case naturally follows. Such locutions are styled in most grammars "Compound Prepositions," and to account for their construction they give the rule "*Compound Prepositions are followed by the genitive case.*"

**609.** We give here a fairly full list of such phrases employed in Modern Irish.

1 bparpað,	along with; on the side of.
1 bpaðnuire,	} in the presence of.
1 látaip,	
or cómaip,	
or coinne,	before; face to face.
ar uét,	} for the sake of, for the love of
ar ron,	
ar ríáit,	under the pretext of.
1 bpoáip,	} along with, in company with.
1 bteanta,	
1 btaob,	concerning; with regard to.
1 bceann,	at the end of.
fé déin,	} for, (in the sense of going for)
1 bcoinne,	
fé déin,	towards.
1 meap,	among, amongst.

ar aḡairō,  
 i n-aḡairō,  
 ar fearō,  
 le h-eapba,  
 ar fuo,  
 i ḡcōir, (i ḡcomoir),  
 ar cūl,  
 i nōiairō,  
 tar éir, o' éir,  
 i ḡcoinneib, i ḡcoinne,  
 i ḡcūrrairōe,  
 cūn, }  
 (cūn), }  
 o' ionnrairōe, }  
 o' ionnrairōe, }  
 le coir, }  
 coir, }  
 i n-euroan,  
 do péir,  
 or cionn,  
 tar ceann,  
 le h-air,  
 i ḡcaiteam, i rīt,  
 i n-aimdeoin, }  
 i n-aimdeoin, }  
 le h-aḡairō,  
 i n-aice.

opposite.  
 against.  
 throughout (used of time).  
 for want of.  
 throughout (used of space).  
 for, for the benefit of.  
 behind, at the back of.  
 after (used of *place*).  
 after (used of time).  
 against.  
 concerning, about.  
 to, towards.  
 towards.  
 beside, by the side of (a sea, a  
 river, &c.)  
 against.  
 according to.  
 over, above.  
 beyond, in preference to.  
 beside, by the side of.  
 during.  
 in spite of.  
 for, for the use of  
 near.

### 610. Some of them are followed by Prepositions

Láim le,	near, beside.
i n-ḡar do,	near.
timcheall ar,	around ( <i>and touching</i> ).
mar ḡeall ar,	on account of.
mar don le,	along with, together with.
i n-éinfeacht le, }	together with, at the same
i n-don-bíge le, }	time as.

### 611. Examples—(1) Nouns.

Do cuir ré or cionn an doras é.	He put it over the door.
Connac i n-aice an tobair iad.	I saw them near the well.
Do siú an ḡadair i ndiaid an trionnaigh.	The hound ran after the fox.
Cia bí i bpochair Seumair?	Who was along with James?
Do tug ré dom an capall ro le n-aḡair an trḡair.	He gave me this horse for the priest.
Tiocfaid ar ais o' éir an tramhair.	I shall come back after the summer.
Ní fuil leigear ar bith i n-aḡair an báir.	There is no remedy against death.
Do cuair ré fá dhéin na scapall.	He went for the horses.
Ar fead an lae.	Throughout the day.
Ar fuo na tíre.	Throughout the country.

Do réir an leabhair seo.	According to this book.
Tá ré le coir na fairrige.	He is beside the sea.
Do cuir ré an lúb tim- ceall ar mo ceann.	He put the loop around my head.

## 612.

## (2) Pronouns.

Ċáinig ré im 'óidair.	He came after me.
Ná téig 'na n'óidair seo.	Do not go after these.
Cia bí 'na f'óidair?	Who was along with him?
Deunfadh é rin ar do fion.	I shall do that for your sake.
Ar ceannuigir é seo lem a'gair?	Did you buy this one for me?
Óir ar a n-a'gair.	I was opposite them.
Tá an f'uireós or ar scionn.	The lark is above us.
An raib tú i n-ar n-aice (i n-aice linn)?	Were you near us?
Ói ré i n-aice liom.	He was near me.
Ċáinig riad im a'gair.	They came against me.

## Translation of the Preposition "For."

613. (a) When "for" means "to bring," "to fetch," use fá óéin, a g-coinne, or ag iarrair, followed by a genitive case; or ag triall ar: as,

Go for the horse.	Téig ag triall ar an scapall.
He went for John.	Cuair ré fé óéin Séagáin.



(b) When "for" means "to oblige," "to please," use *do*, followed by the dative case: as,

Do that for him. *Doen rin do.*

Here is your book for you. *'Seo duit do leabhar.*

Use *do* to translate "for" in the phrases "good for," "bad for," "better for," &c.: as,

This is bad for you. *Ir olc duit é seo.*

(c) When "for" means "for the use of," use *le* *n-aghaid*, followed by a genitive case, or *do* with dative.

I bought this for the *Ceannui gear é seo le*  
priest. *n-aghaid an traidheir*  
(*do'n traidheir*).

He gave me money for *tuig ré airgead dom leo'*  
you. *aghaid.*

(d) When "for" means "duration of time" use *le*, with the dative case, if the time be *past*, but *ar fead* or *go ceann*, with the genitive case, if the time be *future*. In either case past and future are to be understood, not with regard to present time, but to the time of the action described.

(1) He had been there for *Ói ré ann le bliadhain*  
a year when I came. *nuair éainis mé.*

(2) He stayed there for a *D' fhan ré ann ar fead*  
year. *(go ceann) bliadhna*

In the first sentence the year is supposed to be completed at the time we are speaking about, and is, therefore, past with regard to the time we are describing.

In the second sentence the time at which the action of staying (if we be allowed to use the word "action") took place at the very beginning of the year that he spent there. The year itself came after the time we are describing; therefore it is future with regard to that time.

It will be a great assistance to the student to remember that *ar* *read* or *go ceann* are used when in the English sentence the fact is merely stated, as in sentence (2); and that *le* is used when a secondary tense ought to be used in the English sentence, as in sentence (1).

(e) When "*for*" means "for the sake of," use *ar* *ron* followed by a genitive case.

He toiled for a little gold. *Saotruig ré ar ron beas-  
áin óir.*

(f) When "*for*" is used in connection with "buying" or "selling," use *ar* followed by a dative case.

He bought it for a pound. *Ceannuig ré ar púnt é.*  
I sold it for a shilling. *Óíolar ar ríuillig é.*

(g) "*For*" after the English verb "ask" is not translated in Irish.

He asked me for a book. *D' iarr ré leabhar orm.*  
Ask that man for it. *Iarr ar an bfeap roim é.*

(h) "*For*" after the word "desire" (*óúil*) is usually translated by *i* (=in): as, Desire for gold, *óúil i n-óir* or, *óúil in ar óir.*

(i) The English phrase "*only for*" very often means "were it not for," "had it not been for," and is translated by *muna mbiað*, followed by a nominative.

Only for John the horse would be dead now. *Muna mbeað Seagán do beað an capall marb anoir.*

#### 614. Note the following Examples.

I have a question <i>for you</i> .	<i>Tá ceirt agam ort.</i>
To play <i>for</i> (a wager).	<i>Imirt ar (seall).</i>
To send <i>for</i> .	<i>Fíor do cup . . . ar.</i>
A cure <i>for</i> sickness.	{ <i>Leigear i n-agaid tinnir.</i> <i>„ ar tinnear.</i>
To wait <i>for</i> .	<i>Fanamaint le.</i>
<i>For</i> your life, don't tell.	<i>Ar d'anam; ná h-innír.</i>
He faced <i>for</i> the river.	<i>Tug pé a agaid ar an abainn.</i>
They fought <i>for</i> (about) the Fiannship.	<i>Éiríodas ar um an bfiannuisgeacht.</i>
Don't blame him <i>for</i> it.	<i>Ná cuir a mílteán ar (its blame on him).</i>
I have great respect <i>for you</i> .	<i>Tá meaf mór agam ort.</i>
This coat is too big <i>for me</i> .	<i>Tá an cóta ro ró-mór dom.</i>
What shall we have <i>for</i> dinner?	<i>Caidé bíd ar againn ar ar ndinneur?</i>
It is as good <i>for</i> you to do your best.	<i>Tá pé com maic agat do díceall do deunam.</i>

### 615. Translation of the Preposition "Of."

(a) Whenever "*of*" is equivalent to the English possessive case, translate it by the genitive case in Irish.

The son of the man.	MAC AN fíR.
The house of the priest.	TEAC AN trídairt.

There are cases in which the English "*of*," although not equivalent to the possessive case, is translated by the genitive in Irish.

The man of the house.	féar an tíge.
A stone of meal.	Cloic míne.

(b) Whenever "*of*" describes the material of which a thing is composed, or the contents of a body, use the genitive case.

A ring of iron.	fáinne iarainn.
A cup of milk.	Cupán bainne.
A glass of water.	Glóine uisce.

(c) When "*of*" comes after a numeral, or a noun expressing a part of a whole, use *de* with the dative; but if the word after "*of*" in English be a *personal pronoun*, use one of the compounds of *as* with the personal pronouns.

The first day of the week.	An déub lá <i>de'n</i> tréacht-máin.
One of our hounds.	Ceann <i>o'</i> ár n- <i>g</i> adraib.
Many of the nobles	Móran <i>de</i> na h-uairib.
One of us was there.	Ói <i>duine</i> <i>as</i> ainn ann

Some of them.	Cuid aca.
One of these (persons).	Duine aca ro.

A *leat* is used for "*half of it*" or "*half of them.*"

(d) When "*of*" follows "*which*," use *ve* with nouns, and *as* with pronouns.

Which of the men?	Cia (ciaca) ve na fearaib?
Which of us?	Cia asainn?

(e) When "*of*" means "*about*" use *timcioll* or *pá*.  
They were talking of the    *Uíodas as caint timcioll*  
matter.                                *an puoa.*

(f) "*Of*" after the English verb "*ask*," "*inquire*," is translated by *ve*.

Ask that of John.	Fiairpúig rin ve Sheagán.
-------------------	---------------------------

(g) When "*of*" expresses "*the means*" or "*instrument*" use *le* or *ve*.

He died of old age.	Fuar ré báp le sean-aoir.
He died of hunger.	Fuar ré báp leir an ocras.
He died of a seven days' sickness.	Fuar ré báp ve sealar reáct lá.

(h) Both of us.	Sinn araon.
Both of you.	Sib araon.
Both of them.	Siad araon, iad araon.

616.

## Further Examples.

He is ignorant of Irish.

Τά ρέ ἀνὸριοναδ ἰνρ ἀν  
 νῆαεὸιλις.

The like of him.

Δ τειτέρο (his like).

Such a thing as this.

Δ τειτέρο ρεο δε ρυο.

Don't be afraid of me.

Νά βίον εαγλα ορτ ρόμᾱμ.

A friend of mine.

Capa ὀom.

A friend of yours.

Capa ὀuit.

A horse of mine.

Capall liom.

A horse of Brian's.

Capall ie ὀrian.

I have no doubt of it.

Νί ϕuit ἀμρᾱρ αḡam αἰρ.

A man of great strength.

ῤear ἰρ μὀρ nearτ.

Oisin of mighty strength  
 and vigour.

Oirin ba ῤreun nearτ α'ῤ  
 lut.

(ὀΔ is the past tense of ἰρ in the previous sentence.)

I think much of it.

Τά meᾱρ μὀρ αḡam αἰρ.

## CHAPTER VII.

## Classification of the Uses of the Prepositions.

617.

Δῆ, AT.

## 1. To denote possession (a) with τᾱ.

Τᾱ ῤῖαν αḡam.

I have a knife.

Τᾱ αἰνε αḡam ἀρ ἀν

I know that man.

ὀρεᾱρ ρom.



(b) With other verbs :

Coimeáó ré an ríóan aige    He kept the knife for him.  
féin.                                    self.

ᏐᏪᏳ ᏪᏩ ᏩᏩ ᏩᏩ      He left them to them.

2. It is used in a **partitive sense**, of them, &c.

Don tuine ACA.                      Anyone of them.

Ḥaḥ son aḥa.                      Each one of them.

3. With verbal nouns to translate the English present participle :

(a) active — Tá ré ag bualadh an buachaill.

He is beating the boy.

(b) passive— $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  an buacáilil a $\xi\acute{\alpha}$  (' $\xi\acute{\alpha}$ ) buala $\theta$ .

The boy is being beaten.

4. With verbal nouns followed by то, meaning "while."

As out o'ib.      While they were going.

5. To express the **agent** or **cause** with passive verbs.

TÁ an clac á (a) rúáil    The stone is being raised  
 ag Séamur.                    by James.

The English preposition *at* when used with assemblies, e.g. market, fair, school, &c., is usually translated by *an*.

618.

ΑΝ, ΟΝ, UPON.

1. Literal use: αν αν μεροῦ, on the table.

2. In adverbial phrases:

## (a) TIME.

αν βαλλ, just now, by and by. αν περὶ, during.

λά αν λά, day by day.

αν μαριν, in the morning.

αν καιροῦ, by times.

αν ἀν λάτῃ, immediately.

## (b) PLACE.

αν βίτ, in existence, at all.

αν ὀπίσ, behind.

αν θαλάσ,

αν σχολῇ, in school.

αν παρρησίᾳ, } at sea.

αν παντοῦ, throughout,

αν οὐρανῷ,

αν οὐρανῷ, in heaven.

αν γῆ, on the ground.

αν πλοῦ, on board.

αν ὅτι, on the point of.

αν ἐπὶ τῇ γῇ, } on earth.

αν μή, in length.

αν ἐν τῇ θύρᾳ, by (through)

αν ἄνω, \* lengthwise.

the door.

ἐν τριῶν	{	αν πρὸς (πρὸς),	three feet long.
		αν πλατῆ, ..	wide.
		αν ὀψιῶς, ..	high.
		αν βάθους, ..	deep.

## (c) CAUSE.

αν ἀπὸ τοῦτο, for that  
reason, therefore.αν ὑπὸ τῇ πίεσιν, under op-  
pression.

αν ὑπὸ τῇ σκέψιν, for the sake of.

αν κατὰ τὴν θέλησιν, according to the

αν ἐκ φόβου, for fear that.

will of.

\* αν ἄνω, literally on its length.

ar éigin, hardly, by compulsion.      ar toḡa, at the choice of.

(d) MANNER AND CONDITION.

ar cor ar bit, on any condition.	ar veitb, in the form of.
ar an móo, in the manner.	ar riubal, in progress.
ar aḡair, forward.	ar a laigear, at least.
aḡair ar aḡair, face to face.	ar air, back.
leat ar leat, side by side.	ar scút, backwards.
ar tarab, ablaze.	ar tparna, breadthwise.
ar cumar, in the power of.	ar fán, } astray.
beagán ar beagán, little by little.	ar readrán, }
ar cáirpe, on credit.	ar meirge, drunk.
	ar robar, trotting.
	ar iaract, on loan.

3. In numbers :

Trí ar fichio, 28.

Tríomao ar fichio, 23rd.

4. (a) Before the verbal noun, which it eclipses or aspirates to form the past participle active.

ar bunao an dorair doib      Having shut the door,  
o' imtígearar.      they went away.

(b) With the possessive adjective a and verbal noun to form perfect participle passive.

ar n-a cup i n-eagar aḡ, Edited by.

ar n-a cup amaé aḡ Connrao na ḡaeoile, Pub  
lished by the Gaelic League.

## 5. Emotions felt by a person :

Care, sorrow, &c.	Τά ἰμνίδε, ὑπὸν οἶμ.
Thirst, hunger, need, sickness.	Τά τάρτ, οὐδάρ, εἰρβαῖο, τῖννερ οἶμ.
Fear.	Τά εἰσλα, πατρίορ οἶμ.
Joy.	Τά λυτγάιρ, οἶμ.

## 6. In phrases :

Τιοῦτλατὸ ἀρ, favour (conferred) <i>on</i> .	Τά βαογᾶτ ἀρ, there is danger.
Ἰον, ἕαν ἀρ, affection <i>for</i> .	Ἰμννε ἀρ, remembrance <i>of</i> .
Εοτᾶρ, πῖορ, αἰτνε ἀρ, knowledge <i>of</i> , acquaintance <i>with</i> .	Ἰαρδοῖο ἀρ, } complaint ἕανᾶν ἀρ, } against.
ἕρᾶιν ἀρ, horror <i>of</i> , or disgust <i>with</i> .	ἑῦατ ἀρ, hatred <i>of</i> . ἑῖατ ἀρ, debt <i>due from</i> .
Τά ἀμῖρᾶρ ἄγᾶμ ἀρ, I suspect him.	Ἰμᾶρ ἀρ, power <i>over</i> , capacity <i>for</i> .
Ἰμᾶττ ἀρ, power <i>over</i> .	ἑῖατᾶ ἀρ, claim upon.
Ἰνᾶῖο ἀρ, victory <i>over</i> .	Ἰε ἔεανγᾶτ ἀρ, } of obli-
ονόῖρ ἀρ, honour (given) <i>to</i> .	Ἰ' ἑῖατᾶῖο ἀρ, } gation
	Ἰ' ἡατᾶτ ἀρ, } <i>on</i> .

In the above phrases the agent is expressed by ἄγ where possible, τὰ ἕρᾶο, ἕαν, εοτᾶρ, Ἰμννε, &c., ἄγᾶμ οἶτ.

7. **ΔR** is used after various classes of verbs.

(a) Verbs of motion upon or against (*striking, inflicting, &c.*).

Imrim pian Δr.	I punish.
Teilgim Δr (le).	I throw at.
Carad Δr.        }	Met.
Čarlad Δr.       }	
Carad an fear oim.	I met the man.
Do gab ré ve clocaib oitΔ.	He threw stones at them.

(b) After the verb **Beirim**.

Beirim Δr.	I call (name), (Δr before person), induce, persuade, compel a person (to do something).
Beirim iarracht Δr.	I attempt (something or to do something).
Beirim díol Δr.	I requite, repay (a person).
Beirim* fá n-deara Δr,	I cause, make (a person do something).
Beirim grád Δr.	I love (fall in love with), &c.
Beirim míniúgád Δr.	I explain.

(c) After the verb **Beirim**.

Beirim Δr . . . . Δr.	I catch, seize (a person) by (the hand, &c.).
Beirim Δr.	I overtake, I catch.
Beirim breitearnar Δr,	I judge, pass judgment on.
Beirim buaid Δr.	I conquer.

---

\* **Cuirim** may be used in this sense.

**(d) After verbs of Praying, Beseeching, Appealing to.**

larraim ar.	I ask, entreat (a person).
ḡuirōim ar.	I pray <i>for</i> (sometimes I pray <i>to</i> ); but generally ḡuirōim cum Dē ar ron &c. I pray to God for.
imprigim ar.	I beseech.

**(e) After verbs of Speaking about, Thinking of, Treating of, Writing of, &c.**

labbraim ar, I speak of.	Smuainim ar, I think of.
tráctaim ar, I treat of.	Sḡriobaim ar, I write of,
Cuimhnigim ar, I remember.	or about.

**(f) Verbs of looking at :**

feuchaim ar or dearcaim ar. I look at.

**(g) Verbs of threatening, complaining, offending, displeasing, &c.**

dagraim ar.	I threaten.
ḡoilim ar.	I am troublesome to.
ḡeirbim locc ar.	I find fault with.

**(h) Verbs of concealing, neglecting, hindering, forbidding, refusing, &c.**

Ceitim ar.	I conceal from.
Toirmearḡaim ar.	I hinder or forbid.
failligim ar.	I neglect.



(i) Verbs of protecting, guarding, guaranteeing against.

Seacáin tú féin ar an cearcailtín.	Take care of yourself from that car.
Seacáin do lám ar an scloicín.	Take care! That stone will hurt your hand.

8. (a) Cuirim is used with verbal nouns and adverbial phrases beginning with ar :

Cuirim ar cuit.	I put in a tremble.
Cuirim ar coimeádo.	I put on one's guard.
Cuirim ar reádrán.	I set astray.
Cuirim ar cáirde.	I put off, delay, postpone.
Cuirim ar gcúl.	I put aside.
Cuirim ar neimnío.	I reduce to nothing, I annihilate.

(b) Also with many nouns :—

Cuirim ceist ar.	I question.
Cuirim comaoin ar.	I do a kindness to.
Cuirim } Caitim }	crainn ar (tar). I cast lots for.
Cuirim cuma ar.	
Cuirim gearm (fíor) ar.	I arrange.
Cuirim lám ar.	I send for.
Cuirim leigear ar.	I set about.
Cuirim luidesáan ar.	I apply a remedy to.
Cuirim moill ar.	I lay a snare for.
Cuirim toimearg ar.	I delay.
Cuirim imríde ar.	I hinder.
Cuirim imríde ar.	I beseech.

9. *Šnīm* is used with many nouns meaning "I inflict...on."

<i>Šnīm baṣar ap.</i>	I threaten.
<i>Šnīm buaiōreāō ap.</i>	I trouble.
<i>Šnīm caraoio ap.</i>	I complain of.
<i>Šnīm eugcōir ap.</i>	I wrong.
<i>Šnīm peall ap.</i>	I act treacherously towards.
<i>Šnīm rmaēt ap.</i>	I exercise authority over, I restrain.
<i>Šnīm breiteamnar ap.</i>	I judge, pass judgment upon.
<i>Šnīm faipe ap.</i>	I watch.

## 619.            ΔS, OUT OF, FROM.

1. **Literal use :** out of, from, &c.

<i>Čuairō rē ap an tiḡ.</i>	He went out of the house.
<i>Out ap an mbeātairō.</i>	To depart from life.

2. **With various other verbs :**

<i>Dúirigim ap coṡlaō.</i>	I arouse from sleep.
<i>Cuipim ap reitō.</i>	I dispossess.
<i>Cpočaim ap.</i>	I hang from.
<i>Cuipim aram.</i>	I utter (a shriek, &c.).
<i>Léigim ap.</i>	I let off.
<i>Sḡmoraím ap.</i>	I erase from.
<i>Tuitim ap a céile.</i>	To fall asunder.
<i>Tappaing ap a céile.</i>	To pull asunder

**3. To express origin, cause; ground of proof; confidence, trust in:**

Ar gac air.	From every quarter.
Socair do baint ar.	Derive benefit from.
An fáct ar.	The reason why.
Ar ro ruar.	Henceforth.
Ir pollur ar.	It is evident from.
Iontuigte ar.	Inferable from.
Muinigin ar.	Confidence in.

**4. After verbs, of boasting or taking pride in:**

Maoidim ar.	I boast of.
Glórmair ar.	Glorying in.
Lánmair ar féin.	Full of himself.

**620.      Cúin (cum), TOWARDS.**

**1. Cum is used after verbs of motion:**

Cuair pé cum an tige.	He went towards the house.
Cup cum sairrige.	To put to sea.

**2. Before verbal noun to express purpose:**

Éainis pé cum an éapall no díol.	He came to sell the horse.
-------------------------------------	----------------------------

## 3. In Phrases, as :

Tabairt éum cúce.	To bring to pass.
Tabaim éugam.	I take for myself.
Cup éum báir.	To put to death.
Léig éum báir.	Let die.
Steupta éum oibre.	Prepared for work.
Éum go.	In order that.
Suirim éum.	I pray to.
Óul éum oligeadó.	To go to law.

## 621.            De, FROM, OUT OF.

## 1. Literal use :

Dáirim de.	I take from.
Éirísim de.	I arise from.
Tuitim de.	I fall from.
Sgaoitim de.	I loose from (anything)

## 2. Partitive use :

Órong de na daoine.	Some of the people.
Óine de na fearaib.	One of the men.
fearde muintir MacGabhna.	One of the O'Mahoney's

Often before the relative it is equivalent to a superlative relative :

Beuppaó gac níó o'á	I will give everything I
bruit agam.	have.

<p>             1p é an fear 1p doirve o' á              b'acacur niam.              Ní maic leir nío o' á tuc-              air oó.           </p>	<p>             He is the tallest man I              ever saw.              He does not like anything              you gave him.           </p>
---	---

### 3. In the following phrases:

ve b'puz, because	o' áipite, for certain
o' eagla go, lest	ve gnát, usually
o' doir, of age	ve gníom, in effect
ve ríor, perpetually	ve m' iút, to my knowledge
ve óruim, owing to	ve óit, } for lack of,
o' éir, after	o' earbaió, } want of
ve óeoin, willingly	o' aimóeoin, unwillingly,
ve rúit le, in expectation	in spite of
of	ve t'aoib, concerning

### 4. After following verbs, &c.:

fiapruigim ve.	I ask (enquire) of.
leanaim ve.	I adhere to.
líonta ve (le).	Filled with.
lán ve.	Full of.
gnim tagairt ve.	I mention.
gnim úráio ve.	I make use of.
gnim ... ve ....	I make ... out of (from) ...
léigim oíom.	I let slip.

### 5. To translate "with," &c., in phrases like ve léim, with a leap, at a bound.

## 622.

## DO, TO, FOR.

## 1. Literal use :

(a) After adjectives (generally with *ir*) :

<i>cinn</i> te do,	certain for (a person).
<i>cóir</i> do,	right for (a person).
<i>éigean</i> do,	necessary for.
<i>maí</i> t do,	good for.
<i>reap</i> do,	better for.

## (b) After nouns :

( <i>du</i> ) <i>i ro</i> cár do,	for the advantage of.
( <i>ir</i> ) <i>bea</i> ta dó,	(is) his life.
( <i>ir</i> ) <i>at</i> air dó,	(is) his father.

## (c) After verbs :

<i>Ait</i> nim do, I command.	<i>Cinn</i> im do, I appoint for.
<i>U</i> ponnaim do ( <i>ar</i> ) I present to.	<i>Coma</i> irleigim do, I advise.
<i>De</i> ónuigim do, I vouchsafe to.	<i>Di</i> últaim do, I renounce.
<i>Fó</i> graím do, I announce to.	<i>Fó</i> graím do, I am of use to.
<i>F</i> reagraím do, I answer.	<i>Se</i> allaim do, I promise.
<i>Sé</i> ilim do, { I obey or do homage to.	<i>Le</i> igim do, I allow, let.
	<i>Inn</i> irín do, I tell.
<i>Or</i> duigim do, I order.	<i>Ta</i> irbeánaim do, } I show
	<i>Tea</i> rbánaim do, }
<i>Sa</i> baim do <i>co</i> raib, I trample.	<i>Co</i> igim do, I spare.



## 2. To express the agent :

After the verbal noun, preceded by *ap*, *as*, &c.:

*ap vteact anro vov.*      On their arrival here.

With the participle of necessity, participles in  
ion, &c.:

*ni molta vuit e.*      He must not be praised  
by you.

*ir e rin ir invianta vuit.*      That's what you ought to  
do.

3. For its use in connection with the verbal noun see  
pars. 563. 568, 570.

## 623.

*pa* or *pe*, UNDER, ABOUT, CONCERNING.

### 1. Literal use : as,

*ta pe pa 'n mbov.*      It is under the table.

### 2. *pa* is used in forming the multiplicatives :

*a tri pe vo*, twice three.

*a vo pe cestan*, four times two.

### 3. In adverbial phrases :

*pa coman*, (keeping) for.      *pa leit*, separately.

*pa voo*, at last.      *pa veipeav*, at last.

*pa peac*, individually,      *pa man*. just so (as).  
separately.

624.

## ḠAN, WITHOUT.

### 1. Literal use :

Ḡan pinginn im póca.

Without a penny in my  
pocket.

### 2. To express *not* before the verbal noun :

Abair leis Ḡan teacht.

Tell him not to come.

625.

## GO, WITH.

This preposition used only in a few phrases :  
generally before *leis*, *a half*.

Mile go leis.

A mile and a half.

Stat go leis.

A yard and a half.

626.

## GO, TO, TOWARDS.

### 1. Literal use : motion, as—

Go Lúimneac.

To or towards Limerick.

### 2. In Phrases :

Ó uair go h-uair.

From hour to hour.

Ó nóin go céite.

From evening to evening.

Ó maidin go h-oidé.

From morning till night.

627. 1 (in, ann), IN, INTO (*Eclipsing*).

1. Of time :

1nr an τSampab.      In Summer.

## 2. Of motion to a place :

147 ὅτε δὲ ἡ ἐξοικὴ τοῦ Patrick having come into  
ῥάσονται. Ireland.

### 3. Of rest at a place :

Τά ρέ ι nDorpe.      He is in Derry.

4. In following phrases:

1 n- $\alpha$ ompeact te, along with. 1 n- $\alpha$ gairb, against.

1 n̄oiaiō, after.                      1 gceann, at end of.

1 scoinne, against.                      1 scoinap, in front of.

1 ὁμοῦ, in company with. 1 μετ', among.

estimation, about.

5. After words expressing esteem, respect, liking, &c.,  
for something :

Θύνη ἡ χρυσία.      Desire for gold.

6. Used predicatively after τᾶ :

Τάιμ ιμ' φεαρ λάτιφι ανοιρ.      I am a strong man now.

7. In existence, extant :

It's fine weather we're  
having

Ni cōir ōuit ōul amac 7 an aimir fuar acā ann  
anoir.

You ought not to go out *considering* the cold  
weather we have now.

8. Used after *acā* to express "to be able."

Ni bionn ann féin iompōō. He cannot turn.

8 After *cuir*, *beir*, *ōul*, in phrases like :

Cuirim i gcuirinne ōo.	I remind.
Ōul i rochar ōo.	To benefit.

## 628.      IŌIR, BETWEEN, AMONG.

1. Literal use :

nōr iŌir na Romāncāib,	a custom among the Romans.
ōeifir eatorra,	difference between them.

## 2.      IŌIR...AḠIS, BOTH...AND.

iŌir fāiōbir aḡur bōct,	both rich and poor.
iŌir acāir aḡur māc,	both father and son.
iŌir cāorāib aḡur uanāib,	both sheep and lambs.
iŌir fēarāib ir mīnāib,	both men and women.

## 629.      Ie, WITH.

1. Literal use, with :

Ieir an maor,	with the steward.
---------------	-------------------

## 2. With *ir* to denote possession :

<i>ir liomra é.</i>	It is my own. It belongs to me.
<i>Cia leir iad ?</i>	Who owns them ?

## 3. With *ir* and adjectives to denote "*in the opinion of*:"

<i>ir fiú liom é.</i>	I think it worth my while.
<i>'Do b' fada leir.</i>	He thought it long.

## 4. To denote instrument or means :

<i>Brúeadh an fuinneóg le cloic.</i>	The window was broken by a stone.
<i>Fuar ré bair leir an ochar.</i>	He died of hunger.
<i>Loigeadh le teinir é.</i>	He was burned with fire.

## 5. After verbs or expressions of motion :

<i>Amach leir,</i>	Out (he went).
<i>Siar uib !</i>	Stand back !
<i>'D' imcig sí léiti,</i>	She departed.

## 6. With verbs of touching; behaviour towards; saying to; listening to; selling to; paying to; waiting for :

<i>Éir liom,</i>	Listen to me.
<i>Bainim le,</i>	I touch.
<i>Labbaim le,</i>	I speak to.
<i>Díolar an bó leir,</i>	I sold the cow to him.
<i>Ná fan liom,</i>	Do not wait for me.

7. After words expressing comparison with, likeness to, severance from, union with, peace with, war with, expectation of.

Τά πέ ὡς ἀπὸ ὕψους.	He is as tall as I.
Τά πέ ὡς σὺν ἡμῖν.	He is like you.
Ὁ ἀπὸ τοῦ πέ.	He separated from them.

8. With verbal noun to express purpose, intention (see pars. 567, 569).

9. In following phrases :—

τε ἡ ἀγὰρ, for (use of),	τε κοίτη, near, beside.
τε ἡ ὕψους, with a view to.	ἐκ τῆς, near.
τε ἡ ἀπὸ, beside.	μαρ ἁπὸς τε, along with
τε ἡ κάτω, downward.	ἐκ τῆς, beside.

### 630.            μαρ, LIKE TO, AS.

1. Literal use : *as, like to.*

μαρ ὅτι, thus	ὡς μαρ ὅτι, and so on.
Ὁ ἔλαβεν τὴν γυναῖκα. He took her for a spouse.	
ὡς μαρ εἶπεν, (according) as he said.	

2. Before relative particle *α*, it is equivalent to *as, how, where, &c.*

ἐκεῖ μαρ ἃ ἦν, the place where he was.

3. For an idiomatic use of *μαρ*, see par. 353.



### 631. Ó, FROM, SINCE.

#### 1. Since (of time) : as,

ó tús, from the beginning.      ó foin, ago.

Conjunction : as,

Ó naé b'facaí ruid ar b'ic, t'ánsaí ab'ailte arís.  
Since I saw nothing I came home again.

#### 2. Of place, motion from :

Ó Éirinn,      from Erin.

#### 3. In a modal sense :

óó éiríde,      with all thy heart.  
boét ó (i) r'píoraio,      poor in spirit.

#### 4. After words expressing severance from, distance from, going away from, turning from, taking from, exclusion from, cleansing, defending, protecting, healing. alleviating.

### 632. ÓS, OVER.

Used only in a few phrases as :

ór cionn, above, over.      bun ór cionn, upside down.  
ór íriol, silently, secretly.      ór áro loudly.

## 633.

## ROIMH, BEFORE.

## 1. Of time :

Deic nóimíó roimh (cun) Ten minutes to three.  
 Δ τρί.

Roimhe reo. Before this, heretofore,  
 formerly.

Roimhe rin. Previously.

2. Of fleeing before, from; coming in front of; lying  
 before one (=awaiting); putting before one  
 (=proposing to oneself):

Cibé cuirear roimhe é reo Whoever proposes to do  
 do deunamh. this.

Bí an gillpíadó ag iúit roimh The hare was running  
 na conaib. from the hounds.

3. After expressions of fear, dislike, welcome, &c.:

Ná bíod eagla ort rómpa. Do not be afraid of them.

Fáilte rómat (rómaib)! Welcome!

## 634. TAR, BEYOND, OVER, PAST.

## 1. Of motion (place and time):

Leim ré tar an mballa. He leaped over the wall.

An mí reo gab toirinn. Last month.

2. Figuratively: "in preference to," "beyond."

Tar mar bí ré deic Compared with what it was  
 mbliadhna ficead ó roim. 30 years ago.

Tar mar buó dlísteac dó. Beyond what was lawful  
 for him.

## 8. In following phrases :

ὑὸν τὰν, transgress.

τελεῖται τὰν, refer to, treat of

τὰν ἐπὶ, after.

τὰν ἀπὸ, back.

τὰν ἐναντιοῦ, notwithstanding.

## 635. ΤΡΕ, (ΤΡΙ), THROUGH, BY MEANS OF.

## 1. Physically, through :

Τρὶς ἡ δὲ χεῖρες.

Through his hands.

## 2. Figuratively, "owing to" :

Τρὶς ἡ.

Owing to that.

N.B.—In the spoken language τρὶς is generally used instead of τρεῖς or τρεῖς.

## 636. ὑμ, ABOUT, AROUND.

1. Time : ὑμ ἐπὶ τὴν ἑσπέραν, in the evening.

2. Place : ὑμ ἀπὸ τοῦ οἴκου, around the house.

3. About : of putting or having clothing on.

Οὗτοι ἐνέβαλον τὰς ὑμῶν αὐτῶν ἑσθῆδας. They put on their clothes.  
 ὅσοις ἐσθῆδας.

4. Cause : ὅτι, therefore.

## PARSING.

637. A. Parse each word in the following sentence :  
 Δοειρ Σεumar ζυρ τεir ρέιν an capall το bi αize  
 (Prep. Grade, 1900).

- Δοειρ An irreg. trans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, analytic form of the verb *οειρμ* (verbal noun, *ρᾶο*).
- Seumar A proper noun, first declen., genitive Σεumar, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., nom. case, being subject of Δοειρ.
- ζυρ A conjunction used before the past tense: compounded of *ζο* and *ρο*.
- ['o] The dependent form, past tense, of the verb *ιρ*.
- τεir A prepositional pronoun (or a pronominal preposition), 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender. Compounded of *τε* and *ρε*.
- ρέιν An indeclinable noun, added to *τεir* for the sake of emphasis.
- an The definite article, nom. sing. masc., qualifying the noun *capall*.
- capall A com. noun, first declen., genitive *capall*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen. and nom. case, being the subject of the suppressed verb ['o].

- το A particle used as a sign of the past tense, causing aspiration; but here it has also the force of a relative.
- βί An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood past tense, analytic form of the verb τάιμ (verbal noun, βεῖτ).
- αἴγε A prepositional pronoun, 3rd sing., masc. gender, compounded of αἵ and ε.

**B.** Parse the following sentence: Το κύρι ρί πόο  
μόνα ἀρ θεαρεῖ-λαραὺ ἰ n-οῖον τῆς na ρκοιτε μαῖοιν  
λαε beatταμε. (Junior Grade, 1900).

- Το A particle used as the sign of the past tense, causing aspiration.
- κύρι A reg. trans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, analytic form of the verb κυρίμ (verbal noun, κυρ).
- ρί A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gen., conjunctive form, nominative case, being the subject of the verb κύρι.
- πόο A com. noun, first declen., gen. πόο 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, accusative case, being the object of the verb κύρι.

**móna** A common noun, third declension, nom. mōin, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun pōo.

**an** A preposition, governing the dative case.

**vean̄g-larav̄** A compound verbal noun, genitive vean̄g-lar̄ta, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition an.

**i** A preposition, governing the dative case, and causing eclipsis.

**ōion** A com. noun, first declens., gen. ōin, 3rd pers. sing. masc. gender and dative case, governed by preposition i.

(N.B.—This word may also be second declension).

**tīge** An irreg. com. noun, nom. teac̄, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend., genitive case, governed by the noun ōion.

**na** The definite article, genitive sing. feminine, qualifying p̄cote.

**p̄cote** A common noun, second declension, nom. p̄cot, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gend. and genitive case, governed by the noun tīge.



**μαῖοιν** A com. noun, second declension, gen. μαῖοις, 3rd pers. sing., fem. gender, and dative case, governed by the preposition ἐν (understood).

**λαε-βασταῖς** A compound proper noun, nom. λαε-βασταῖς, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case, governed by the noun μαῖοιν.

**C. Parse:** τᾶμ εἰς οὗτ ἐκὺν ἀν ἀνδρῶν (Junior, '98).

**τᾶμ** An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, present tense, 1st pers. sing., synthetic form, of τᾶ (verbal noun, βεῖν).

**εἰς** A prep, governing the dative case.

**οὗτ** A verbal noun, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition εἰς.

**ἐκὺν** A noun (dative case, governed by οὗτ understood) used as a preposition governing the genitive case.

**ἀν** The definite article, gen. sing. masc., qualifying the noun ἀνδρῶν.

**ἀνδρῶν** A common noun, first declen., nom. ἀνδρᾶς, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gender, and genitive case governed by ἐκὺν.

**D. Parse:** *ní cóir é do bualadh.*

- ní** A negative adverb, causing aspiration, modifying the suppressed verb *ir*.
- [ir]** The assertive verb, present tense, absolute form.
- cóir** A common adjective, positive degree, comparative *cóir*, qualifying the phrase *é do bualadh*.
- é** A prep. pronoun, 2nd pers. sing. compound of *do* and *tú*.
- do** A personal pronoun, 3rd pers. sing., nom. case, disjunctive form, being the subject of the suppressed verb *ir*.
- do** A preposition, causing aspiration, and governing the dative case.
- bualadh.** A verbal noun, genitive *bualte*, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition *do*.

N.B.—*É do bualadh* is the subject of the sentence.

**E. Parse:** *táinig ré le capall a ceannad.*

- táinig** An irreg. intrans. verb, indic. mood, past tense, 3rd pers. sing. of the verb *táim* (verbal noun, *teacht*).

- re** A pers. pron, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gen., conjunctive form, nom. case, being the subject of *táinig*.
- te** A preposition governing the dative case.
- capall** A common noun, first declens. gen. *capall*, 3rd pers. sing., masc. gend. and dative case governed by *te*.
- a** The softened form of the preposition *ro*, which causes aspiration, and governs the dative case.
- ceannac.** A verbal noun, genitive *ceannuigte*, 3rd pers. sing., dative case, governed by the preposition *a*.

## IDIOMS.

### *τá...agam, I HAVE.*

† 98. As already stated there is no verb "*to have*" in Irish. Its place is supplied by the verb *τá* followed by the preposition *ag*. The direct object of the verb "*to have*" in English becomes the subject of the verb *τá* in Irish: as, I have a book. *τá leabhar agam*. The literal translation of the Irish phrase is "*a book is at me.*"

This translation appears peculiar at first sight, but it is a mode of expression to be found in other languages. Most students are

familiar with the Latin phrase "*Est mihi pater.*" I have a father (lit. there is a father to me); and the French phrase *Ce livre est à moi.* I own this book (lit. This book is to me).

We give here a few sentences to exemplify the idiom:—

He has the book.	Τά αν τεαβαν αige.
I have not it.	Νι φuit ré αgam.
Have you my pen?	Αν βφuit μο पेανн αgac?
The woman had the cow.	Όι αν τό αg an macoi.
The man had not the horse.	Νι παib an capall αg an bpeap.
Will you have a knife to-morrow?	Αν mbéirό rgian αgac i mbápac?
He would not have the dog.	Νι διαb an macopa αige.
We used to have ten horses.	Όο βiόb veic gcapall αgaimn.

### IS LIOM, I OWN.

639. As the verb "*have*" is translated by τά and the preposition αg, so in a similar manner the verb "*own*" is translated by the verb ιs and the preposition ιε. Not only is the verb "*to own*," but also all expressions conveying the idea of *ownership*, such as: The book belongs to me: the book is mine, &c.; are translated by the same idiom.

I own the book.	} ιr liom an τεαβαν.
The book is mine.	
The book belongs to me.	

The horse was John's.	}	bá le Seagán an capall.
The horse belonged to John.		
John owned the horse.		

Notice the position of the words. In translating the verb "*have*" the verb *tá* is separated from the preposition *ag* by the noun or pronoun; but in the case of "*own*" the verb *ir* and the preposition *le* come together. (See par. 589, &c.)

I have the book.                      *Tá an leabhar agam.*

I own the book.                      *ir liom an leabhar.*

In translating such a phrase as "*I have only two cows*," the noun generally comes after the preposition *ag*: so that this is an exception to what has been said above.

I have only two cows.                      *Ní fuil agam aic d'á buin.*

## I KNOW.

640. There is no verb or phrase in Irish which can cover the various shades of meaning of the English verb "*to know*." First, we have the very commonly used word *feadhar* (or *feadhar mé*), *I know*; but this verb is used only after negative or interrogative particles, and has only a few forms. Again, we have the verb *aitnínim*, *I know*; but this verb can only be used in the sense of *recognising*. Finally we have the three very commonly used phrases, *tá eolair agam*,

τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ, and τὰ ἄ ῥιор ἀγᾶμ, all meaning "I know;" but these three expressions have three different meanings which must be carefully distinguished.

Whenever the English verb "know" means "to know by heart," or "to know the character of a person," "to know by study," &c., use the phrase τὰ εολα ἀγ...ἀρ.

Whenever "know" means "to recognise," "to know by appearance," "to know by sight," &c., use the phrase τὰ αἰθε ἀγ...ἀρ. This phrase is usually restricted to persons.

When "know" means "to know by mere information," "to happen to know," as in such a sentence as "Do you know did John come in yet?" use the phrase τὰ ἄ ῥιор ἀγ, e.g. Ὀρῡτ ἄ ῥιор ἀγᾶτ ἀν ὅτᾶνις Σεᾶᾱν ιρτεᾶτ ῥόρ?

As a rule young students experience great difficulty in selecting the phrases to be used in a given case. This difficulty arises entirely from not striving to grasp the real meaning of the English verb. For those who have already learned French it may be useful to state that as a general rule τὰ εολα ἀγᾶμ corresponds to *je sais* and τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ to *je connais*

τὰ αἰθε ἀγᾶμ ἀρ ἀτ νί ϕῡτ εολα ἀγᾶμ ἀρ. *Je le connais mais je ne le sais pas.* I know him by sight but I do not know his character. "Do you know



*that man going down the road ?*" Here the verb "know" simply means recognise, therefore the Irish is: *ḃfuil aithe aḡat ar an ḃfeap roin atá aḡ out ríor an bótar?* If you say to a fellow-student "*Do you know your lessons to-day?*" You mean "Do you know them by rote?" or "Have you studied them?" Hence the Irish would be: "*ḃfuil eolar aḡat ar do ceactannaib iníu?*"

Notice also the following translations of the verb *know*.

<i>ir maít ir eol dom,</i>	'Tis well I know.
<i>ir ríorac (feapac) dom,</i>	I know.
<i>deirim an rud atá ar</i>	I say what I know.
<i>eolar aḡam,</i>	

### I LIKE, I PREFER.

**641.** "*I like*" and "*I prefer*" are translated by the expressions *ir maít (áit, aít) liom* and *ir feapp liom* (it is good with me; and, it is better with me).

I like milk.	<i>ir maít liom bainne.</i>
He prefers milk to wine.	<i>ir feapp leir bainne ná ríon.</i>
Does the man like meat?	<i>An maít leir an ḃfeap feoil?</i>
Did you like that?	<i>Ar maít leat é rin?</i>
I liked it.	<i>Ba maít liom é.</i>
We did not like the water.	<i>Níor maít linn an t-uirge</i>

**642.** If we change the preposition "le" in the above sentences, for the preposition "do," we get

another idiom. "It is really good for," "It is of benefit to." 1r maic̃ dom é. It is good for me; (*whether I like it or not*).

He does not like milk but it is good for him.

Ní maic̃ leir bainne áct 1r maic̃ dó é.

**N.B.**—In these and like idiomatic expressions the preposition "le" conveys the person's own ideas and feelings, whether these are in accordance with fact or not. 1r fiú liom out go n-Albain. I think it is worth my while to go to Scotland (*whether it is really the case or not*). 1r móir liom an tuac poin. I think that a great price. 1r ruapac liom é rin. I think that trifling (*another person may not*).

The word "think" in such phrases is not translated into Irish.

1r fiú dúit out go n-Albain. It is really worth your while to go to Scotland (*whether you think so or not*).

### CIÚ LIOM, I CAN, I AM ABLE.

643. Although there is a regular verb *féudaim*, meaning *I can, I am able*, it is not always used. The two other expressions often used to translate the English verb "*I can*," are *ciú liom* and *1r féuir liom*.

The following examples will illustrate the uses of the verbs.

### Present Tense.

feudoim, tiz liom* or ir féidir liom,†	}	I can, or am able.
feudann tú, tiz leat or ir féidir leat.	}	Thou canst or art able.
&c.,		&c.

### Negative.

ní feudoim, ní tiz liom; or ní féidir liom.	}	I cannot, I am not able.
--	---	--------------------------

### Interrogative.

An dtiz leat? or an féidir leat?	}	Can you? or are you able?
-------------------------------------	---	---------------------------

### Negative Interrogative.

Nac dtiz leir? or nac féidir leir?	}	Can he not? or is he not able?
---------------------------------------	---	--------------------------------

### Past Tense.

D' feudar, táinig liom, or do b' féidir liom.	}	I could, or was able.
--	---	-----------------------

### Imperfect.

D' feudainn, tiseadh liom.	I used to be able.
----------------------------	--------------------

\* Literally: It comes with me.

† It is possible with me.

## Future.

φευράω, τιοφάω ἑαυτὸν. I shall be able.

## Conditional.

Ὅ φευράω, το τιοφάω } I would be able.  
ἑαυτὸν.

Ὅ φέρει τὸν, (He thinks) he cannot.

Ὅ φέρει τὸν, He cannot (It is absolutely  
impossible for him).

## I MUST.

644. The verb “*must*,” when it means **necessity** or **duty**, is usually translated by the phrase *ní fúlai* or *caítrō*. This latter is really the third person singular, future tense of *caíim* ; but the present and other tenses are also frequently used. It may also be very neatly rendered by the phrase, *ir éigean* το (lit. *it is necessary for*).

Ὅ fúlai τὸν, καίτρω μέ, or } I must.  
ir éigean τὸν.

Ὅ fúlai σὺ, καίτρω σύ, or } You must.  
ir éigean σὺ.

Ὅ fúlai αὐτόν, καίτρω εἰς, or } He must.  
ir éigean αὐτόν  
&c., &c.

The English phrase “**have to**” usually means “*must*,” and is translated like the above : as, *I have to go home now*. *Caítrō mé out a báile anois*.

The English verb "*must*," expressing duty or necessity, has no past tense of its own. The English past tense of it would be "*had to*:" as, "*I had to go away then.*" The Irish translation is as follows:—

Níor b'fúláir dom, Chaic mé, or } I had to.  
do b'éigean dom.

Níor b'fúláir duit. Chaic tú, or } You had to.  
do b'éigean duit.

&c.,                      &c.

The English verb "*must*" may also express a **supposition**; as in the phrase "*You must be tired.*" The simplest translation of this is "Ní fúláir go bfuil tuirpre ort," or, "Ní fúláir nó tá tuirpre ort." The phrase "ir coramail go," meaning "*It is probable that*," may also be used: as, ir coramail go bfuil tuirpre ort.

The English phrase "*must have*" always expresses **supposition**, and is best translated by the above phrase followed by a verb in the past tense, as, "*You must have been hungry*," Ní fúláir go raib ocpar ort. *He must have gone out*, Ní fúláir go nveacairó ré amac.

Ní fúláir gur éuaró (or go nveagairó) ré amac, is used in Munster.

## I ESTEEM.

645. *I esteem* is translated by the phrase Tá mear agam ar. Literally, "*I have esteem on.*"

I esteem John.

Τά meap aḡam ap ḡeaḡán.

Did you esteem him?

Ῥαib meap aḡat air?

He says that he greatly  
esteems you.

Deip ré ḡo bḡuit meap  
mór aise opta.

## I DIE.

**646.** Although there is a regular verb, *eug*, *die*, in Irish it is not often used; the phrase *ḡeibim báp*, *I find death*, is usually employed now. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

The old man died yester-  
day.

ḡuair an rean-ḡear báp  
inḡé.

We all die.

ḡeibimḡ uile báp.

I shall die.

ḡeóḡao báp.

They have just died.

Τáirḡ tap éir báir ḡ'ḡaḡáil.

You must die.

Caicḡrḡ tú báp ḡ'ḡaḡáil.

## I OWE.

**647.** There is no verb “*owe*” in Irish, Its place is supplied by saying “*There is a debt on a person.*”

Τά ḡiaḡ\* optm.

*I owe.*

Whenever the amount of the debt is expressed the word *ḡiaḡ* is usually omitted and the sum substituted.

He owes a pound.

Τά púnt air.

You owe a shilling.

Τά ḡḡilling opt.

---

\* The plural of this word, *ḡiaḡa*, is very frequently used in this phrase.



When the person to whom the money is due is mentioned, the construction is a little more difficult: as, *I owe you a pound*, as,  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\pi\acute{\upsilon}\nu\tau$   $\alpha\zeta\alpha\tau$   $\sigma\mu$ , i.e., You have (*the claim of*) a pound on me—the words in brackets being always omitted.

He owes me a crown.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$   $\kappa\omicron\rho\acute{o}\nu$   $\alpha\zeta\alpha\mu$   $\alpha\mu$ .

Here is the man to whom you owe the money.  $\text{Seo } \acute{e} \text{ an } \text{fear } \Delta \text{ (go) } \text{bhril an } \tau\text{-}\alpha\mu\text{rgead } \alpha\text{ige } \sigma\tau.$

## I MEET.

648. The verb "*meet*" is usually translated by the phrase "*there is turned on*," e.g., "*I meet a man*" is translated by saying "*A man is turned on me*."  $\kappa\alpha\rho\tau\alpha\mu$   $\text{fear } \sigma\mu$  ( $\mu\text{om}$  or  $\acute{o}\text{om}$ ); but the phrase  $\text{buailtear}$  (or  $\acute{e}\alpha\rho\iota\Delta$ )  $\text{fear } \sigma\mu$  is also used. *I met the woman*,  $\acute{o}\text{o } \kappa\alpha\rho\acute{\alpha}\text{o an } \text{bean } \sigma\mu$  ( $\mu\text{om}$  or  $\acute{o}\text{om}$ ).

They met two men on the road.  $\acute{o}\text{o } \kappa\alpha\rho\acute{\alpha}\text{o } \text{beirt } \text{fear } \sigma\tau\Delta \text{ ar an mbótar.}$

I met John.  $\text{Buail Seagán umam.}$

## Physical Sensations.

649. All physical sensations, such as *hunger*, *thirst*, *weariness*, *pain*, &c., are translated into Irish by saying that "*hunger, thirst, &c., is on a person*;" as, I

am hungry.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  ocpar opm. Literally, *hunger is on me*. He is thirsty.  $\tau\acute{\alpha}$  tapc air. Literally, *thirst is on him*.

The same idiom is used for emotions, such as pride, joy, sorrow, shame, &c. The following examples will illustrate the construction:—

Ùruit ocpar opt?	Are you hungry?
Ní ùruit ocpar opm anois.	I am not hungry now.
Ùí an-tapc opainn inóé.	We were very thirsty yesterday.
Ùí ana tapc opainn inóé.	
Ùruit náipe opta?	Are they ashamed?
Ùí náipe an traoḡail uirri.	She was very much ashamed.
Ùéirò bróó mór air.	He will be very proud.
Raib tuirpe opt?	Were you tired?
Ná bíorò eagla opt.	Don't be afraid.
$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ana éotlaó opm.	I am very sleepy.
$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ rlaḡoán opt.	You have a cold.

Whenever there is a simple adjective in Irish corresponding to the English adjective of *mental* or *physical sensation*, we have a choice of two constructions, as:—

I am cold.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ mé ruar	or $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ ruact* opm.
You are sick.	$\tau\acute{\alpha}$ tú tinn (or breoite)	„ $\tau\acute{\alpha}$ tinneap opt.
I was weary.	Ùí mé tuirpeac	„ ùí tuirpe opm.

\* Distinguish between rlaḡoán a cold (a disease) and ruact, the cold, coldness (of the weather) and the adjective ruar, cold.

Τά μέ τινν and τά τινnear οpm have not quite the same meaning, Τά μέ τινν means *I feel sick*; but τά τινnear οpm means *I am in some sickness, such as fever, &c.*

### I CANNOT HELP.

650. The English phrase "I cannot help that," is translated by saying *I have no help on that*. Νι fuit nearτ αham απ rin. The word teigear, "cure," may be used instead of nearτ.

When "cannot help" is followed by a present participle in English, use Νι  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{féadaim} \\ \text{féioir uim} \end{array} \right\}$  san, with verbal noun: as, *I cannot help laughing*, Νι  $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{féadaim} \\ \text{féioir uim} \end{array} \right\}$  san gáirde.

### I AM ALONE.

651. There are two expressions which translate the English word "alone" in such sentences as I am alone, He is alone, &c., i.e., Tám im donar, or Tám uim féin (I am in my oneship, or I am by (with) myself). He is alone. Τά ré na donar, or Τά ré teir féin. She was alone. Όί rí 'na h-donar, or Όί rí téiti féin. We shall be alone. Όéimio 'náp h-donar. or béimio uim féin.

### I ASK.

652. The English word "ask" has two distinct meanings according as it means "beseech" or "inquire." In Irish there are two distinct verbs, viz.,

ἵαμμα, I ask (*for a favour*), and πληροφοίμ, I ask (*for information*). Before translating the word “ask” we must always determine what is its real meaning, and then use ἵαπη or πληροφοίς accordingly.

Ask your friend for money. ἵαπη ἀίρῃσας ἀπὸ τοῦ φίλου.

Ask God for those graces. ἵαπη ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἵνα ἡμᾶς ἐκδώσῃς τὰς χάριτας σου.

Ask him what o'clock it is. πληροφοίς τοῦ καθ' ὅσον ἔστιν ἡ ὥρα.  
He asked us who was that at the door. Ὁ πληροφοίς τίς ὁ ὄντις ἐκτὸς τῆς θύρας.

They asked me a question. Ὁ πληροφοίς ἐρωτήσας με ἐρώτημα.

## 653.

## I DO NOT CARE.

I do not care.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
It is no affair of mine.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
Is it not equal to you?	ἴσ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν;
It is no affair of yours.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
You don't care.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
He does not care.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
It is no affair of his.	ἴρ' οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
We did not care.	οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
It was no affair of ours.	οὐ μετὰ τὸν.
They did not care.	οὐ μετὰ τὸν.

(See what has been said about the prepositions τε and το in the Idiom “I prefer,” par. 642.)

## I OUGHT.

**654.** “*I ought*” is translated by the phrase *ir cóir* (or *ceart*) *dom*. You ought, *ir cóir túit, ir ceart túit*. We ought to go home, *ir cóir dúinn tut a báile*. We ought to have gone home, *bá cóir dúinn tut a báile*. As the word “*ought*” has no inflection for the past tense in English, it is necessary to use the *past infinitive in English* to express past time. But as the Irish expression, *ir cóir*, has a past tense (*bá cóir*) the *simple verbal noun* is always used in Irish in such expressions.

Ought you not have gone to    *náir cóir túit tut go*  
Derry with them?                    *Doine leo?*

He ought not have gone    *níor cóir dó imteacht*.  
away.

**English Dependent Phrases translated by the  
Verbal Noun.**

**655.** Instead of the usual construction, consisting of a verb in a finite tense followed by its subject (a noun or a pronoun), we very frequently meet in Irish with the following construction. The English finite verb is translated by the Irish verbal noun, and the English subject is placed before the verbal noun. If the subject be a noun it is in the nominative *form*, but if a pronoun in the disjunctive *form*.

The following examples will exemplify the idiom:—

I'd prefer *that he should be*    Do b'fearr uim é do  
there rather than my-    beir ann ná mire.  
self.

Is it not better for us that    Nac fearr dúinn gan iad  
these should not be in    ro do beir in an mbád.  
the boat.

I saw John when he was    Connaic mé Seagán agus  
coming home.    é ag teacht a baile.

I knew him *when I was a*    Bí aithe agam air agus  
*boy.*    mé im buachaill.

The clock struck *just as*    Do buail an clog agus é  
*he was coming in.*    ag teacht isteach.



## Idiomatic Expressions.

## CUIN.

Cuin oimra é.	Say it was I did it.
Cuimpre ortra é.	I say it was you did it.
Cuin umat (ort).	Dress yourself.
Cuin an tairt go móir air.	Thirst annoyed him greatly.
Cuipfeadtra d'fíadaib ort rtao.	I'll make you stop.
Cuin iadaill air é (a) téanaí.	Make him do it.
Ná cuin orm γ ní cuipfeao ort.	Don't interfere with me and I will not interfere with you.
Cuin ré a man.	He tracked him (her, them).
Cuin ré rtró orm.	He addressed me.
Cuin ré rpeic (or ruan) orm.	
Cuipear nómam a téanaí.	I resolved to do it.
Tá cuin ríor (tráct or iomráo) ar an gcogao.	There is talk about the war.
Cuin ré culair éadais dá téanaí.	He got a suit of clothes made.
Cuin ré 'na luige orm.	He convinced me of it.
Cuin i gcár sup raigtoir míre.	Suppose me to be a soldier.
Cuin ar bun.	Established.
Cuin (bain) ré faoi i gCorcais.	He settled down in Cork.
Tá ré ag cuin 'r ag cúiteam.	He is debating in his mind.

## ΤΑΘΑΙΝ.

Ταθαίρ ρυαρ.	Surrender.
Τά ρέ ταθαίρτα. } Τά ρέ βυαίτε ρυαρ. }	He is played out.
Τα ρέ τυγτα (ταθαίρτα) το'ν λοτ ραν.	He is <i>addicted</i> to that vice.
Ταθαίρ το όρουμ λειρ.	Turn your back to him.
Ώγαρ ρέ νθεάρ(α) αν ρολαρ.	I <i>noticed</i> the light.
Τά ρέ ταθαίρτα ρυαρ.	He has been given up for dead.
Ώγ ρέ ρυαρ.	He gave <i>in</i> .
Τά ταθαίρτα ρυαρ αίγε.	He <i>has given in</i> .
Ιρ θεαθαίρπίρνε γείτεαδ το ταθαίρτ ο'ά céile.	It is hard to <i>reconcile</i> truth and falsehood.
Τά ταθαίρτ ρυαρ μόρ αιρ.	He is <i>highly educated</i> .

## ΘΕΑΝ.

Θέαν ρυο αρ το μάταίρ.	<i>Obey</i> your mother.
Νί θέανραθ ρέ ρυο ορμ.	He would not <i>oblige</i> me.
Ναε μαίτ ναε νθεάρηαιρ ρέιν é !	<i>How well</i> you didn't do it yourself !
Ναε μαίτ νά θέανανν τί ρέιν ρυο αρ το μάταίρ ?	Why don't you obey your mother yourself ?
Νυαιρ τιγεαοαρ α ρεαθαρ το όινιρ (ρίννιρ) αν θεαρτ.	When they understood <i>how well</i> you had done the trick.
Θέαν αιρε (το) ταθαίρτ τοο ζνό ρέιν. } Θέαν το ζνό ρέιν. } Ταθαίρ αιρε τοο ζνό ρέιν. }	<i>Mind</i> your own business.

Déan na ba do éirí Milk the cows.

(bleaḡan).

An nḡeáirí an dorur Did you shut the door?

do dúnad?

Tá ré aḡ déanam oḡainn. He is coming towards us.

imḡiḡ.

Conur (cionnur) o' imḡiḡ How did he *get on*?

leir?

Cao o' imḡiḡ air?

{What *became* of him?

{What *happened* to him?

Nuair tuiteann ruid mar  
reo amac.

When something like this  
*happens*.

Cao imḡeoḡar oim?

(Cḡeud éireoḡar dom?)

What *will become* of me?

nā.

Dob' é an céad uime do  
buaíl uime nā Seagán  
liat.

The first person he met  
was Seagán liat.

Ir é ruid dob' fēair leir  
feircint nā na Sapanaiḡ  
ḡo léir o'ā nōibirt ar  
Éirinn.

What he wished most to  
see was the banishment  
of the whole of the  
English from Ireland.

Ir é ruid do tug anoir cum  
cainte leat mé nā mé  
beir i ḡcruadō-cār.

What brought me to talk  
with you now is the fact  
that I am in difficulty.

Ir é ruid do rinne (ḡein)  
anfeair nā caiteam leo.

What the man did was to  
throw at them.

Is é puo do d'ain Séamair  
annrain nÁ i b'pionnao  
air.

What James did then was  
to make him a present  
of it.

Is é puo a'beirteao gac  
éinne nÁ gur maic air.

What everyone used to say  
was that it was a great  
blessing for him.

### mÓR.

Is mór le nÁo é.

It is *important*.

Is mór le maorúeam é.

It is a thing to be proud  
of, or boast about.

Níor mór le nÁo é.

It was not of much  
importance.

Ní mór dom filleadó.

I *must* return.

Ní mór dom g'luairteac.

I must take my departure.

Ní mór linn duit.

We have no objection to  
your doing so.

Ní mór liom d'ó é.

I don't *grudge* it to him.

Ní mór nac (nÁ go) b'fuit  
ré d'éanta.

It is *almost* done.

Ní mór ná go mbeiré ré  
c'fiochnuigte.

It will be nearly finished.

Cá mór dom, &c.?

*Why shouldn't I, &c.?* lit.,  
how is it too much for  
me?

Nac mór a d' éirig tú!

How grand you have got!

Ní móire (mó + ve) go  
nagad.

It is not *likely* that I shall  
go.

## beas.

1r beas liom é.	I <i>consider</i> it too small.
1r beas oim é.	I don't like it at all.
1r beas agam é.	I have no great opinion of him.
1r beas an rgeal é.	It's no great harm. He is not to be pitied.
1r beas an cabair tú.	You are not of much use.
1r beas dá fíor agat.	'Tis little you know.
1r beas nac mictio do beic ag imteact.	It is <i>nearly time</i> for him to be going.
Da beas nár mictio do beic ag imteact.	It was nearly time for him to be going.
1r beas a bpiú é.	It is a trifle.
1r beas má tá éinne i n-Éirinn o' féadfaid é déanamh.	<i>There is hardly</i> a person in Ireland who could do it.

## Miscellaneous.

An éireodair (ré) uinn?	Shall we <i>succeed</i> ?
Bí ré ag éirge fuar.	It was <i>getting</i> cold.
Maid an áit go rabair!	Well said! or Well done!
Maid mar tápla.	It has happened luckily.
Níor labair ré fiú aon focal amáin.	He did not speak a <i>single</i> word.
San fiú na h-anála do tarrainn (tarac).	Without <i>even</i> taking breath.
Fiú ár ndaoine féin.	<i>Even</i> our own people.

Τά ρέ αἷς οὐλ ἰ βρεῶν.	He is <i>getting better</i> .
Τά ρέ αἷς οὐλ ἰ η-ολκαρ.	He is <i>getting worse</i> .
Ἀβαιρ ε !	Hear ! hear ! Bravo !
Ἡμὶ κυμῖν τιμὸν ἀ τετῆρο.	I don't remember <i>the like of it</i> .
Ὁ ἐὰρτα ἀν τεῶν αἷς ἀν ἀνοῖρ.	As I <i>happen to have the</i> book now.
Τά ρέ γεῶν τε βεῖτ ποτῶν } Τά ρέ ποτῶν νὰς μὸρ. }	It is <i>almost empty</i> .
Ἡμὶ οὐλ οὐλ οὐλ αἷς αἷς.	You cannot <i>avoid it</i> .
Τά ἀν ρεῖρ ραν αἷς οὐλ ἰ μβεο οῖρ.	That man's conduct <i>cuts</i> <i>me to the quick</i> .
Τά ρέ ἰ μὸςτ βῶρ. } Τά ρέ τε η-ὐςτ βῶρ. }	He is <i>at the point of death</i> .
ἰρ μῖλτε(αῖ) ἀν ρεῖα ε.	It is a terrible affair.
ἰρ καῖλτε ἀν τῶ ε τε ρῖτε.	It is a terribly wet day.
Σεῖα ἡ ἀν οῦτ.	A very <i>unlikely</i> story.
Λεῖς (λεὸς) οὐμ ρεῖν τεο' οὐο καῖτε.	Don't annoy me with your talk.
Καὶ ε ἀν οὐο ἀτῶ αἷς αἷς οῖ ?	What right (call) have you to it ?
Ἀν οὐο ἰρ λῖςα οῖ οῦα οὐρ ρῶ μβλῖαοῖν.	At least <i>twice a year</i> .
Κορρ νῶ η-εῖςκορρ.	The <i>essence</i> of wrong.
Λε κορρ οῖομῶοιρ.	Through <i>downright</i> laziness.
Τά ρμῖτ οῖ'η ἐεῖρτ αἷς.	He is <i>partly</i> right.
ἰρ τεῖν ἀν ἡνὸ οὐτ ε.	'Tis an <i>absurd thing</i> for you to do.



Cao 'na tsaob ná ceann-  
nuigeann tú bróga dúit  
féin? San an t-airgead  
do beic agam.

Tá pé ar nór cuma liom.  
Cé tá ar ár dtí?  
Tá pé ar do tí.

Daoine nác mé.

Ói cead raor aige ar bual.  
Ír bual achar do.

Ói mo turas i n-airdear.  
Ca leigeann tú a leas.

Sogaille go.

Beiré ran 'na marla 7 'na  
súit ar a gclú an dá lá  
'r an fáil a beiré srian  
ra rpeir.

Tá pé beagán fuar.

Tá pé poinnt boðar.

Tá pé san beic ar fógham,  
ní fuil an t-uball ro  
aibíó i gceap.

Ní cúrraíde gáiríde é.

Do gáirfá, mura mbeaó  
nac cúir gáiríde é.

Why don't you buy boots  
for yourself? *Because*  
I have not the money.

He is *indifferent*.

Who is *intending* us harm?  
He is bent on attacking  
you. He intends to  
harm you.

Others *besides* myself.

He had *permission* to go.  
He has it from his father.  
My journey was *in vain*.  
You need not.

A fool's errand; a wild  
goose chase.

That will be a reproach  
and a blot on their  
fame the *longest day* the  
sun will be in the sky.

It is a little cold.

He is *somewhat* deaf.

He is a *little unwell*.

This apple is not *quite*  
ripe.

It is nothing to laugh at.  
You would laugh only  
that it is not a matter  
to laugh at.

Ní cúppaire cainte é.	It is nothing to talk about.
Tarraing eúgac nuóéigint eile mar cúppaire magair.	Find something else to make fun about.
Caoé an gnó atá agat de?	What do you want it for?
Do bainead ianpact de geit ar.	He was <i>slightly</i> startled.
Ní fuil don gar ag tpeim leir an mballa.	There's no use trying to get up on the wall.
Ní raib don maitear 'na glór.	<i>In vain</i> did he cry (talk, speak).
Ní móire gur rscriob ré an litir.	<i>Perhaps</i> he did <i>not</i> write the letter.
Tabaim lem' air rin vo dénam.	I <i>propose</i> to do <i>that</i> .
Tá buídeac ar agam ort (fé)	I am <i>thankful</i> to you ( <i>for</i> ).
Táim buídeac díot (fé.)	
Beirim buídeac ar tuit mar geall (gioll) air.	I <i>thank</i> you <i>for</i> it.
Tabaim buídeac ar leat mar geall air.	
Beir tú déanaí (béirde- naí) ag an traen.	You will be late <i>for</i> the train.
Beir tú déanaí ar rgoil.	You will be late <i>for</i> school,
Bí cuio aca gá ráó go raib beirte (bercta) ar an mbiteamínac.	Some of them were saying that the rascal was caught.
Eipeocair a éiríde ar Diamuir.	It will <i>break</i> Dermot's heart.

Sgairc riad ar gáiríob.  
Munab ort aca an éaint !

They burst out *laughing*.  
What talk you have ! If  
it isn't you have the  
talk.

Luis an éaint go léir ar  
an matalong a bí  
imtiogte ar Sábó.

The whole conversation  
*turned* on the misfor-  
tune which *had befallen*  
Sive.

Níor imtiog ort a aca an  
puo a bí tuillte aca.

They only got what they  
*had deserved*.

Seir orainn teacht riar  
leo.

We failed to overtake  
them.

Tá ré ag déanamh aicir  
ar a éaint.

He is *mimicking* his man-  
ner of talking.

Tá ré ar an bpeir ir  
raibóire ra Mumain.

He is *the richest man* in  
Munster.

Ir dóca gur dóic leo.

Probably they *imagine*.

Tá ré buailte irteac im  
aighe.

I am *firmly convinced*.

Loirgead id' na mbeadaid.

They were burnt *alive*.

Caó adéanfad cor ar bí  
aighe ?

What will I do at all with  
*him* ?

Bí breir mór 7 a sceart  
aca dá fágáil.

They were getting a great  
deal *more than* their  
right.

Bí coróin fé'n bpúnt aca  
dá fágáil.

They were getting five  
shillings *in the pound*.

Bí gac uile duine ag  
déanamh triaig (triaig)

Everyone was *sympathis-*  
*ing* with her.

Comhnaoip do Sheagán an té ba fine aca.	The eldest of them was the same age as John.
Ba dóic leat air sup leir an áit.	You (one) <i>would imagine</i> <i>by him</i> that he owned the place.
Ní raib a tuairis ann.	There wasn't a trace of him there.
Com mairt asur dá mba ná raib éascoir ar bit ann.	<i>Just as if</i> it were not wrong.
D'fiannuig ré cad fé nóear an ruit.	He asked <i>what was the</i> <i>cause</i> of the merriment.
Céir a mac tú?	Whose son are you?
Ní mairtear puinn ruit.	You will meet <i>your match</i> .
Cá b'fior ruit?	How did you know?
A rgeal féin rgeal sac éinne.	Everyone is most inter- ested in his own affairs.
Turá fé nóear roin.	<i>You are the cause</i> of that.
Tá gnó nac é asam.	I have a <i>different matter</i> to look after.
Ní cairé dom féin.	I am <i>no exception</i> ; i.e., I am the same as the others.

### The Autonomous Form of the Irish Verb.

It is sometimes necessary or convenient to express an action without mentioning the subject, either because the latter is too general or not of sufficient importance to be mentioned, or because there is some other reason for suppressing it. Most languages have felt this necessity, and various means have been adopted to supply it. The use of the passive voice, or of reflexive verbs, or of circumlocutions, is the method generally adopted in other languages. In Irish there is a special form of the verb for this purpose. As it has no subject expressed it is sometimes called the **Indefinite** form of the verb: as it forms a complete sentence in itself it is also called the **Autonomous** or **Independent** form.

An English verb cannot stand without its subject. For example, "walks," "walked," etc., express nothing. The English verbs cannot alone make complete sense. The Autonomous form of Irish verbs can stand alone. The word "buaitear" is a complete sentence. It means that "*the action of striking takes place.*" The Autonomous form stands without a subject; in fact it cannot be united to a subject, because the moment we express a subject the ordinary 3rd person singular form of the particular tense and mood must be substituted. Buaitear an bopó. *Someone (they, people, we, etc.) strikes the table*; but buaiteann an fear (ré, ríad, na daoine, etc.) an bopó.

We shall take the sentence: Buaitear an gádh le cloic ó lámh ċaróis. The word "buaitear" of itself conveys a complete statement, viz., that *the action of*

*striking takes place.* The information given by the single word “*buaitear*” is restricted to the action. There are circumstances surrounding that action of which we may wish to give information; *e.g.* “What is the object of the action?” “*An gearr.*” “What is the instrument used?” “*Le cloic.*” “Where did the stone come from?” “*Ó lár na cailín.*” We may thus fill in any number of circumstances we please, and fit them in their places by means of the proper prepositions, but these circumstances do not change the nature of the fundamental word “*buaitear*.”

It may be objected that the word “*buaitear*” in the last sentence is passive voice, present tense, and means “*is struck*,” and that “*an gearr*” is the subject of the verb. Granted for a moment that it is passive voice. Now since “*Buaiteann tuine éigin é*,” *somebody strikes him*, is active voice, as all admit, and by supposition “*buaitear é*,” *somebody strikes him*, or, *he is struck*, is passive, then comes the difficulty, what voice is “*caitín buaite*,” *somebody is struck*? Surely it is the passive of “*buaitear*”; and if so “*buaitear*” itself cannot be passive, though it may be rendered by a passive in English. If we are to be guided merely by the English equivalent, then “*buaiteann*” in the above phrase is as much a passive voice as “*buaitear*,” because it can be correctly translated into English by a passive verb: *viz., He is struck.*

When we come to consider this form in intransitive verbs, our position becomes much stronger in favour of the Autonomous verb. Let us consider the following sentence: *Siubáltar ar an mbótar nuair bíonn*



an bótar tirim, áit nuair bíonn an bótar fliú, riubaltar ar an gclaoí. *People walk on the road when it is dry, but when the road is wet they walk on the path.* Where is the nominative case of the so called passive verb here? Evidently there is none. The verb stands alone and conveys complete sense. If we wish to express the nominative, the Autonomous form of the verb cannot be used. In the above sentence we might correctly say: Siublaíonn ré (riao, rinn, na daoine, etc.), but not riubaltar é (iaio, rinn, na daoine, etc.)

Probably classical scholars will draw analogies from Latin and quote such instances as, *Concurritur ad muros. Ventum est ad Vestae. Sic itur ad astra. Deinde venit ad portam*; where we have intransitive verbs in an undoubtedly passive construction, and therefore, by analogy, the true signification of riubaltar in the above sentence is "*It is walked,*" and it is simply an example of the *impersonal passive construction*. Now, if conclusions of any worth are to be drawn from analogies, the analogies themselves must be complete. The classical form corresponding to the Irish bítear ag riubal ar an mbótar nuair bíonn an bótar tirim, etc., or tátear ag riubal ar an mbótar anois is wanting, and therefore the analogy is incomplete and deductions from it are of little value.

One of the strongest arguments we have in favour of the Autonomous verb is the fact that the verb "to be" in Irish possesses every one of the forms possessed by transitive and intransitive verbs. The analogy with Latin again fails here. Tátear ag teacht,

*Somebody is coming. Beirtear as riubal, Somebody will be walking. Nuair mótuig an t-atac go rabhtar as ceangailt a cor, When the giant perceived that they were binding his legs.*

The Irish Autonomous form cannot be literally translated into English, because no exact counterpart exists in English, hence the usual method of translating this form is to use the English passive voice, but the Irish verb is not therefore passive. To give an instance of the incapability of the English language to express *literally* the force of the Autonomous verb, notice the English translation of the subjoined example of the continued use of the Autonomous verb in an Irish sentence.

“Áit ana-aepeac ir ead an áit rin : nuair bítear as gabáil an tpeo rain i n-am maipb na h-oirce, aipútear coirpdeact o’á oéanam 7 foctiom map beiprde as pú 7 foctiom eile map beiprde as teicead, 7 annrain aipútear foctiom map tiocfaide ruar 7 map buailprde 7 map beiprde faoi bualaó 7 map bupprde, 7 annrain aipútear map beaó deapú-puactar 7 tóir.”

This passage cannot be literally translated: the following will give a fair idea of its meaning: “That place is frequented by fairies: when one is walking near it in the dead stillness of the night, footsteps are heard and loud noises, as if people were running and fleeing, and then other noises are heard as if people were overtaking (those who were running away), and were striking and being struck, and as if they were being broken in pieces, and then are heard noises as if they were in hot rout and pursuit.”

The Autonomous form of the verb has a passive voice of its own formed by the addition of the verbal adjective (or past participle) of the verb to the Autonomous forms of the verb *to be* ; e.g., *ṭáṭar buailte*, etc.

This form of the Irish verb has a full conjugation through all the moods and tenses, active and passive voices ; but has only one form for each tense. All verbs in Irish, with the single exception of the assertive verb *ir*, have this form of conjugation. *ir* can have no Autonomous form, because *ir* has no meaning by itself. It is as meaningless as the sign of equality (=) until the terms are placed one on each side of it.

To sum up then, the Irish Autonomous form is not passive, for—

(1) All verbs (except *ir*), transitive and intransitive, even the verb *ṭá*, have this form of conjugation.

(2) This form has a complete passive voice of its own.

(3) The disjunctive forms of the personal pronouns are always used with it ; e.g., *buailtear é*.

(4) Very frequently when a personal pronoun is the object of the Autonomous form of the verb, it is placed last in the sentence or clause to which it belongs, thus giving a very close analogy with the construction of the active verb, already explained in par. 535. *Níor éian dam...gur reolaṭ irṭeac ran scoill reo mé...It was not long until I was driven into this wood. Do leigearṭ ó n-a scréacṭaib iad. They were healed of their wounds.*

(5) Lastly, and the strongest point of all, in the

minds of *native* Irish speakers, without exception, the word *buaitear* in such sentences as "*buaitear an gádh*" is *active*, and *gádh* is its object. Surely those Irish speakers are the best judges of the true shape of their own thoughts.

We will now give a synopsis of the various forms of the Autonomous verb, beginning with the verb *τά*.

### The Verb *τά*.

<i>τάταρ</i> .*			is, are.
<i>ní fuittear</i> .†			is not, are not.
<i>bítear</i> ( <i>bítear</i> ).			does be, do be.
<i>ní bítear</i> .			does not be, do not be.
<i>bítear</i> ( <i>bítear</i> ).			was, were.
<i>ní raibítear</i> .			was not, were not.
<i>bíci</i> .			used to be.
<i>beifear</i> , <i>beifear</i> , <i>beir-</i>			will be.
<i>fean</i> , <i>béitear</i> .			
<i>beirí(óe)</i> , <i>beirí(óe)</i>			would be.
<i>béici</i> .			
<i>bítear</i> (Let).			be.
<i>má táταρ</i> (If).			is, are.
<i>má bítear</i> (If).			does be, do be.
etc.			
<i>νά mbeirí</i> (If).			were, would be.
<i>go raibítear!</i> (May).			be ( <i>for once</i> ).
<i>go mbítear!</i> (May).			be ( <i>generally</i> ).
<i>Deirim go bfuiltear</i> , I say that someone, etc., is.			
<i>Deirim ná fuittear</i> ,	"	"	is not.

\* *τάταρ* or *τάτα'ρ*.

† *fuittear*, *fuiltea'ρ*.

### An Intransitive Verb.

Siubaltar.			walks, walk.
tátar ag siubal.			is (are) walking.
bítear ag siubal.			does (do) be walking
siublað.			walked.
bítear ag siubal.			was (were) walking.
siubaltaoi.			used to walk.
bítí ag siubal.			used to be walking.
siubaltar.			will walk.
beifar ag siubal.			will be walking.
siubaltaoi.			would walk.
beifí ag siubal.			would be walking.
siubaltar (Let).	Someone, we, they, people, etc.		walk.
bítear ag siubal (Let).			be walking.
má siubaltar (If).			is (are) walking.
etc.			
óá siubaltaoi (If).			would be walking.
óá mbeifí ag siubal (If)			were walking.

### A Transitive Verb.

A noun is placed after the active forms in order to show the cases.

Buailtear an clár.	Someone strikes the table.
Tátar ag bualað an cláir.	Someone is striking the table.
Tá an clár óá (gá) buatað.	The table is being struck
Tátar buailte.	Someone is struck.
Tátar fé buatað,	Someone is being struck.
Bítear ag bualað an cláir.	Someone usually strikes the table.
Óó buaiteað an clár.	Someone struck the table.



Ùitear ag bualaò an clàir.	Someone was striking the table.
Ùi an clàir d'á (gá) bualaò.	The table was being struck.
Ùitear buailte.	Someone was struck.
Ùitear fé bualaò.	Someone was being struck.
Buailtí an clàir.	Someone used to strike the table.
Ùití ag bualaò an clàir.	Someone used to be striking the table.
Ùití buailte.	Someone used to be struck.
Buailfear (buailfear) an clàir.	Someone will strike the table.
Beifear ag bualaò an clàir.	Someone will be striking the table.
Beifear buailte.	Someone will be struck.
Buailfí (buailfí) an clàir.	Someone would strike the table.
Beifí ag bualaò an clàir.	Someone would be striking the table.
Beifí buailte.	Someone would be struck.
Buailtear an clàir.	Let someone strike the table.
Ùitear ag bualaò an clàir.	Let someone be striking the table
Má buailtear an clàir.	If someone strikes the table.
Má bítear ag bualaò an clàir.	If someone does be striking the table.
etc.	
Dá mbuailfí an clàir.	If someone were to strike the table.



Ṭá mbeirí ag buailtú an If someone were to be  
 clár. striking the table.

Before leaving this important subject it may not be uninteresting to see what some Irish grammarians have thought of the Autonomous form.

O'Donovan in his Irish Grammar (p. 183) wrote as follows :—

“The passive voice has no synthetic form to denote persons or numbers ; the personal pronouns, therefore, must be always expressed, and placed after the verb ; and, by a strange peculiarity of the language, they are always ‘*in the accusative form.*’

“For this reason some Irish scholars have considered the passive Irish verb to be a form of the active verb, expressing the action in an indefinite manner ; as, buailtear mé, *i.e., some person or persons, thing or things, strikes or strike me ; buailtear é, some person or thing (not specified) struck him.* But it is more convenient in a practical grammar to call this form by the name passive, as in other languages, and to assume that tú, é, í, and iad, which follow it, are ancient forms of the nominative case.”

Molloy says in his Grammar, page 62 :—

“Verbs have a third form which may be properly called deponent ; as buailtear mé, *I am (usually) beaten ; buailtear ú, thou art (usually) beaten ; buailtear é, he is (usually) beaten.* The agent of this form of the verb is never known ; but although verbs of this form always govern the objective case, like active verbs, still *they must be rendered in English*

by the passive; as, *buaitear iad, they were beaten.* Here *iad* is quite passive to the action; for it suffers the action which is performed by some unknown agent."

Again at page 99, he says:—

"But there is another form of the verb **which always governs an objective case**; and although it must be translated into the passive voice in English, still it is a deponent, and **not a passive, form in Irish**; as, *buaitear mé, etc.* The grammarians who maintain that this form of the verb takes a nominative case clearly show that they did not speak the language; for no Irish-speaking person would say *buaitear ré, rí, ríad*. It is equally ridiculous to say that *é, í, iad*, are nominatives in Irish, although they be found so in Scotch Gaelic."

Further on, at page 143, he states again that "*deponent verbs govern an objective case.*"

Thus we plainly see that O'Donovan and Molloy bear out the fact that the noun or pronoun after the Autonomous form of the verb is in the **accusative case**, though the former says it is more convenient to assume that *it is in the nominative case!*

# APPENDICES.

## Appendix I.

### NOUNS OF THE FIRST DECLENSION.

αδρίάν, a song.  
 αῦαρταρ, a halter.  
 αῦδαρ, a cause.  
 αῦμαο; wood.  
 αμασάν, a fool.  
 αῖμαρ, a sight.  
 αῖμαρ, doubt.  
 αοιδεαρ, delight.  
 αοιλεαδ, manure.  
 αοι, lime.  
 αριάν, bread.  
 αρισάν, hillock.  
 αριμ, an army: pl. αριμ, αριμα.  
 ατ, swelling or tumour.  
 άταρ, gladness.

βάο, boat.  
 βαλβάν, dummy. (stammerer).  
 βάρι, top.  
 βάρ, death.  
 βεαζάν, a little.  
 βιαδ, food; gen. βιό.  
 βιορίάν, a pin.  
 βιτεαμνάδ, rascal.  
 βλαρ, taste.  
 bonn, sole, foundation.  
 bóταρ, road; nom. pl. bóιτρε.  
 βμασάν, a salmon.  
 βμόο, joy, pride.  
 βριμαδ, foal or colt.  
 βριόν, sorrow.  
 βριμαδ, brink; pl. βριμαδα.  
 βυριεαδαρ, thanks.  
 bun, bottom.

cairéal,\* a stone fortress.  
 calaδ, harbour.

χαριβαο, chariot.  
 χαριη, heap.  
 χαρίάν, path.  
 χαρίρι, hammer.  
 cat, cat.  
 ceann, head or end.  
 ceol, music; pl. ceolta.  
 ceuolongaδ,† breakfast.  
 cineál, kind or sort.  
 cleamnar, marriage alliance.  
 cléiread, clerk.  
 clog, bell, clock.  
 cozaδ, war; pl. cozta or cozaioe.  
 copán, cup.  
 creiream, faith, religion.  
 cuan, bay or haven; pl. cuanta.  
 cuδar, foam.  
 cúi, back of the head.

daol, beetle.  
 deiread, end.  
 diaδal, devil.  
 dinneur, dinner.  
 doταρ, harm.  
 doiεaall, grudge, reserve.  
 doiman, earth, world.  
 donar, misfortune.  
 doimar, door; pl. doimre.  
 duad, difficulty.  
 dútταρ, inherited instinct.

eapball, a tail.  
 eapraδ, Spring.  
 eiεean, ivy.  
 eolar, knowledge.  
 euroad, cloth, clothes.

\* This word also means a child's spinning "top."

† In spoken language βριερεαρτα, m., is used for "breakfast."

fap̃ḡaḡ, } shelter.  
 fop̃ḡaḡ, }  
 fiaḡ, raven; pl. fēiḡ or fēiḡ.  
 focaḡ, a word; pl. focaḡ or  
 focla.  
 foḡmaḡ, Autumn.  
 fonn, tune or air.

ḡaḡaḡ, goat.  
 ḡaḡaḡ, beagle.  
 ḡannaḡ, gander.  
 ḡap̃rūn, a young boy.  
 ḡeamaḡ, green corn.  
 ḡeap̃icaḡ, young bird  
 ḡlaḡ, lock.  
 ḡlōḡ, voice.  
 ḡob, beak (of a bird).  
 ḡneann, humour.  
 ḡuaḡ, coal.

iaḡann, iron.  
 (f)ioḡaḡ, eagle.  
 ionaḡ, place.  
 ip̃leán, hollow.

laḡḡ, calf.  
 láḡ, middle.  
 leaḡaḡ, a book; pl. leaḡaḡ,  
 leaḡa.  
 leaḡián, booklet.  
 leaḡaḡ, leather.  
 leun, misfortune  
 líon, a net; pl. líonta.  
 lón, provision.  
 loḡḡ, a track.

maḡaḡ or maḡma, a dog; pl.  
 maḡmaḡe.  
 maḡaḡ, mockery, ridicule.  
 maḡi, a steward.  
 maḡi, steer or beeve.  
 meaḡ, failure.  
 miḡleán, blame.  
 mionnán, kid.  
 móḡán, much, many.

mullaḡ, top; pl. mullaḡe.

naom̃, a saint.  
 neap̃i, strength.  
 ocmaḡ, hunger.  
 óḡ, gold.

páḡánaḡ, a pagan.  
 páipeuḡ, paper.  
 pióbán, windpipe or neck.  
 poḡi, tune or air.  
 p̃neucán, crow.

pián, track; gen. piain.  
 pióḡ, road.  
 piún, secret.

paḡ, a sack.  
 paḡaḡi, a priest.  
 paḡaḡ, kind or sort.  
 paḡann, salt.  
 paḡmaḡ, summer.  
 paḡḡaḡ, life, world.  
 paḡi, craftsman. artisan.  
 paḡaḡ, exertion, work.  
 paḡaḡ, hawk.  
 peoḡ, a precious thing, jewel;  
 pl. peoḡa.  
 p̃geut, news; pl. p̃geuta;  
 p̃geutḡa, stories.  
 p̃laḡmaḡ, chain; pl. p̃laḡmaḡe.  
 poḡ, wisp.  
 róḡi, } kind or sort.  
 róḡo, }  
 p̃pioḡaḡ, a spirit.  
 p̃poḡ, a spur.  
 p̃róḡi, sport.  
 p̃tóḡi, treasure store.  
 p̃uaḡiḡnear, repose.

tamall, a short space of time.  
 taoḡpeaḡ, a captain, a leader.  
 teaḡliḡ, hearth.  
 t̃poḡḡán, furniture.  
 túḡ, beginning

## Appendix II.

A list of feminine nouns ending in a broad consonant, belonging to the Second Declension.

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
ἄδῃς	ἄδῃς	a horn
ἄβός	ἄβόγῃς	a doll
βαίρωεᾶς	βαίρωγῃς	rain
βαρῖας	βαρῖαγῃς	tow
βεᾶς	βεῖς	bee
βεᾶνν	βεῖννε	a mountain peak
βεῖας	βεῖαγῃς	a heifer
βλάτας	βλάτῃς or βλάταγῃς	buttermilk
βορ	βοῖρ	palm (of the hand)
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	judgment
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	a lie
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	word of honour
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	a shoe
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	palace, fort
βρεῖς	βρεῖς	a troop
καίλεις	καίλιγῃς	an old woman
καίλις	καίλις	deceit.
καίλις	καίλις	hen
καίλις	καίλις	a trade
καίλις	καίλις	sense
καίλις	καίλις (pl. καίλις)	distance
καίλις	καίλις	beetle
καίλις	καίλις	a comb
καίλις	καίλις	a harp
καίλις	καίλις or καίλις	children
καίλις	καίλις	a stone
καίλις	καίλις	an ear
καίλις	καίλις	plumage
καίλις	καίλις	a wound
καίλις	καίλις	a heifer
καίλις	καίλις	a foot
καίλις	καίλις	a branch
καίλις	καίλις	a spear
καίλις	καίλις	plunder
καίλις	καίλις	crag
καίλις	καίλις	end
καίλις	καίλις	gibbet
καίλις	καίλις	cross
καίλις	καίλις	cuckoo
καίλις	καίλις	a fly

NOM.	GEN.	MEANING
vadac	vaidce	a vat
vealb	veibce	a form
vealg	veirge	a thorn
veoc	vige	a drink
vion	vine	protection
voineann	voiminne	bad weather
vread	vriecce	face, visage
earog	earoige	a weasel
readt	reicce	time, occasion
readg	reirge	anger
reupog	reupoirge	beard
ritceall	ritcille	chess
pleao	pleioce	a feast
plearg	pleirge	wreath
rheim	rheime	a root
ruinneog	ruinneoirge	window
ruinnreog	ruinnreoirge	an ash
ruireog	ruireoirge	a lark
gablog	gabloige	a little fork
gaot	gaioce	wind
gealac	gealairge	moon
geug	geige	branch
gioog	gige	squeak
geirpreac	geirpriige	girl
giorpac	giorprairge	
glun	gluine	knee
gruan	gréine	sun
gruag	gruairge	hair
iall	éille	thong
ingean	ingine	daughter
lam	laimce	hand
lapog	lapoirge	match (light)
latac	laticce, latairge	mud, mire
leac	leice	a stone flag
leat	leice	half, side
long	luinge	ship
lub	luibe	loop
luc	luice	mouse
meup	méipe	finger
mac	muice	pig
neam	neime	heaven



NOM.	GEN.	MEANING.
óinpeac	óinrize	fool (f.)
oróos	oróóize	thumb
piapc	péirce	reptile
piapcós	piapcóiize	worm
piob	píbe	musical pipe
pluc	pluice	cheek
pós	póize	kiss
riap	réine	order, regulation
rál	ráile	heel
realz	reilze	hunt
reapc	reirce	love
reirpeac	reirriize	blough
rseac	rseice	hawthorn bush
ršian	ršine	knife
ršiam	ršéime	comeliness
ršiac	ršéite	shield
ršóinnac	ršóinnaiize	throat
ršriob	ršríbe	scrape
rion	rine	weather
rlac	rlaite	rod
roineann	roininne	fine weather
rpeal	rreile	scythe
rplanc	rplaince	spark, thunderbolt.
rrón	rróine	nose
	rróna	
raob	raoibe	side
reuo	réioe	string
conn	cuinne	wave
treac	treibe	tribe
uó	uibe	an egg

### Appendix III.

#### NOUNS BELONGING TO THE THIRD DECLENSION.

- (a) All personal nouns ending in óir, úir,  
 (b) All abstract nouns ending in ac̑.  
 (c) Verbal nouns in ac̑, áil, and amain.  
 (d) The following list:—

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
ac̑c	ac̑ca	decree
ainm	ainma	name

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
αιρίοc	αιρίστe, αιρεαστ̃α	repayment, restitution
αιτόρι	αιτόρια	altar
ανάλ	ανάλα	breath
αναν	αννα	soul
δοῶ	δοῶα	Hugh
δορ	δορα	folk, people
ἀτ̃	ἀτα	ford
beannaδ̃τ	beannaδ̃τα	blessing
βαιν-μίοζαν	βαιν-μίοζνα	queen
βιορι	βεαρι	a (cooking) spit
βιτ̃ (βιοτ̃)	βεατ̃α	life
βιάτ̃	βιάτ̃α	blossom
βλιαῶαιν	βλιαῶνα	a year
βλιοῖτ̃	βleaδ̃τα	butter-milk
βοτ̃	βοτα	tent, cot
βρυζ̃	βριοζ̃α	palace, mansion
βυαῖαιλλ	βυαῖαιλλα	boy
βυαιῶ	βυαῶα	victory
βυαιῶριτ̃	βυαιῶεαριτ̃α	trouble.
καῶαιρι	καῶρια καῶριαδ̃	help
κάιν	κάνα	tax
κάριγ̃	κάριγ̃α	Easter
κατ̃	κατα	battle
cion	ceana	love, desire, affection
ciop̃	ciop̃a	rent
ciτ̃, m. (ciot̃)	ceaτ̃α	shower
cleap̃	cleap̃a	a trick
cliam̃ain, m.	cliam̃na	son-in-law
cnám̃	cnám̃a	bone
coṡlaṡ	coṡaτ̃α	sleep
cóρι	cóριa	justice
conñiaṡ	conñiaτ̃α	compact, covenant
cor̃naṡ	cor̃naτ̃α	defence
criáṡ	criáṡa	torture, destruction
criop̃	crieap̃a	belt
criuτ̃	crioτ̃α	form
cuãir̃e	cuãir̃eτ̃α (or cuãir̃ite)	visit
cuiṡ	coṡa	part, share
ṡáil	ṡála	account, meeting
ṡán	ṡána	destiny
ṡaδ̃	ṡaτ̃α	colour
ṡeanaṡ	ṡeanaṡa	make or shape
ṡiaim̃uiṡ	ṡiaim̃uiṡa	Dermot
ṡoṡt̃úρι	ṡoṡt̃úριa	doctor
ṡr̃úṡt̃	ṡr̃úṡτ̃α	dew
ṡr̃uim, m.	ṡr̃uoma	a back

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING.
éaric	éarica	tax, tribute
euo	eua	jealousy
euloó	euloá	escape, elopement
rát	ráta	cause, reason
reapc	reapca	a grave, tomb
reapcainn	reapcanna	rain
reioim	reioima	service, use
reoi	reola	flesh, meat
riacail	riacala	a tooth
ríon	ríona	wine
ríop	reapa	knowledge
rlaie	rlaia	prince
roš	roša	a sudden attack
rošluim	rošlumta	learning
róšmaó	róšapca	{ decree
ruašmaó	ruašapca	{ announcement
ruačt, <i>m.</i>	ruačta	cold
ruapšlaó	ruapšluigta	ransom, redemption
ruat	ruata	hatred
ruil	rola	blood
šleann	šleanna	valley
šnioim	šnioima	act, deed
šoin	šona	wound
šnáó	šnáóa	love
šneim, <i>m.</i>	šneama	a piece
špuč	špučta	curds
šul	šola	weeping
šut	šota	a voice
iaimaió	iaimaóa	a desire, request
iač	iačta	land, country
iomáin	iomána	hurling (a game)
iompiáo	iompiáioce	report, notice
leabao, <i>f.</i>	leabta	a bed
leáčt	leáčta	a grave
lionn	leanna	beer, ale
liop	leapa	a fort
loč	loča	lake
ločt	ločta	reproach
lup	lopa	an herb
maioim	maioima	defeat, rout
maiteain	maitece	forgiveness
meap	meapa	esteem

NOM.	GENITIVE.	MEANING
mian	miana	desire
mil	meala	honey
moó	moóa	manner
móin	móna	bog
muir	maia	sea
óḡ	óḡa	a young person
olann	olna	wool
ollaḡain	ollaḡna	instruction
onóin	onóia	honour
orḡlaó	orḡailte	admission, opening
maḡ	maḡa	luck
maḡet, m.	maḡeta	law
muḡet	maḡeta	a form
muḡ	maḡa	running
raḡail	raḡaila	an equal, like
Samain	Samna	November
rḡáḡ	rḡáḡa	shadow
roḡ	roḡa	flower
reál	reala	a space of time
rioc	reaca	frost
riotḡáin	riotḡána	peace
riḡet	reḡeta	posterity
rmaḡet, m.	rmaḡeta	a curb
rnáin	rnáina	a swim
roḡ	roḡa	pleasure
rmaḡ	rmaḡa	a layer
rión	rióna	nose
riuḡ	riuḡa	stream
táilliúin	táilliúia	tailor
táin	tána	a drove
tionrḡain	tionrḡanta	purpose, project
toil	toia	a will
tráig	tráigā	a strand
tréao	tréaoa	flock, drove
treoir	treoia	guide, troop
trieur	trieura	battle
trioir	trioia	fight, quarrel
Tuaim	Tuama	Tuam
tuat	tuata	tribe
uaḡh	uaḡha	cave
uḡet	uḡeta	breast

## Appendix IV.

## THE NOUNS OF THE FIFTH DECLENSION.

The letters in brackets give the termination of the genitive singular.

adb or adba, gen. adbann, a river ;  
pl. aibne or aibneada.

adonta(-ó), license, permission.

arra(-n), Isle of Arran ; pl. airne,  
The Arran Isles.

arra(-n), kidney.

beoir (beoirac), beer.

briagha(ó), m., the upper part of  
the breast.

brieteamh(an), m., a judge.

briog(-n), a quern, handmill pl.  
briointe.

caora(c), a sheep ; pl. caoiriú.

cara(ó), a friend ; pl. cáiríoe.

caitir(-éiac), a city, fortress.

caithoir(-íeac), a chair.

ceairíoca(-n), a forge, smithy.

ceathramh(-n), a quarter.

clair(-íac), a furrow.

coirir(-íeac), a feast.

comurra(-n), neighbour ; pl.  
comurraim.

comla(-c), a gate, door.

comra(-n), a coffer, cupboard,  
coffin.

coróin(-íac), a crown.

cráin(-íac), a sow.

cu, gen. con, a hound ; pl.  
coin, cona, hounds.

cúil(-ac), a corner.

cuirle(-ann), a pulse, vein.

uáileamh(-an), a cup-bearer.

uair(-ac), an oak.

uaimh(-n), palm of the hand.

uile(-ann), flood, deluge ; pl.

uileanna, uileanna.

éalaíoca(-n), science, learning.

earaonta(-ó), disagreement, dis-  
obedience.

earcu (compound of cú), an eel.

eirir(-íeac), an oyster.

eochar (eocharac), a key.

eorra(-n) [or gen. same as nom.],  
barley.

fealtamh(-an), m., philosopher.

feiceamh(an), m., debtor.

feoir(-ac), The Nora.

fochar(ac), a sign, mark.

íce(ao), twenty.

íochail(ííac), plunder.

íada(-n), m., a smith ; pl. íadga.

íráin (íráíac), hatred.

íuala(-n), a shoulder ; pl.  
íuailíne, íuailíleada.

íongha(-n), a nail (of the finger) ;  
pl. íngne.

íada(-n), a duck.

íáir (íáíac), a mare.

íánaíma(-n), a married couple.

íarair (íaríac), a flame.

íáitair (íáííac), a level plain.

íeaca(-n), m., a cheek ; pl.  
íeacainíeada.

íuríga(-n), the shin ; pl. íurígne.

maíuríurí(-íeac), a monastery.

meánma(-n), the mind.

míle(-ao), a soldier, warrior.

náíma(-ó), an enemy ; pl. náíííoe.

ííoláíis (ííoláíis), Christmas.

olíamh(-an), a doctor, professor

íeairra(-n), a person.

ííagáil (ííagííac), a rule.

ííoga(-n), a choice ; pl. ííógííaca,  
ííógíííeada.

íáíil (íáííac), a beam.

íeangha(-n), a cormorant.

íráíil (íráííac), a stallion.

íáíil(-ac), a wedge.

íalám, gen. íalíam, land.

íeamáir (íeamííac) Tara.

íeangha(-n or ó), tongue ; pl.  
íeangííaca.

íeoíma(-n), boundary, limit.

uííle(-ann), an elbow.

uíííaca(-n), a beard

uííííaca(-n), a door-jamb.

## Appendix V

## A LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBAL NOUNS.

VERB.	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
ἄβαιμι ἀνομνίζ	say confess	ῥάϋ ἀνομáιτ
βαίν βειμι βλίξ βρῦιτ βυáιν	snatch, take* bear, carry milk cook reap.	βαιντ βρειτ βλιξiαν βρῦιτ βυáιντ
καίλλ καίτ ceánnuiz ceíl céim cinn cláoio coimeuo	lose throw, open, consume buy conceal step determine defeat watch, guard	cailleámain caíteám, caíteáϋ ceánnac ceílτ céim cinneámain cláoι coimeuo
coirpiz coirz cómpiaic cozair congáib corpnuiz copain cpiero cuip	bless prevent fight whisper keep stir, move defend believe put, send	{coirpneázan coirpneázáϋ corz cómpiaic cozair congááil corpnuize copnaím, copainτ cpieroéámainτ cuip
ceárimao óiol opuio óúipiz	forget sell shut (M. move towards) awake	ceárimao óiol opuioim óúipeáct, óúpázáϋ
éaz éiliz éipiz éipt	die claim rise, arise listen	éaz éileám, éiliuázáϋ éipize éipteáct
faz fáz fan	find, get leave wait	fázáil fázáil fanámainτ

\* To take a thing not offered is "βαιν;" but when offered. "ζλαc"



VERB.	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
fár	grow	fár
feao	whistle	feaozáil
feap	pour out, shower	feapáin
feic	see	feicpint
feuch	behold, look	feuchaint
fiarpuig	ask, enquire	fiarpuighe
fógluim	learn	fógluim
foill	suit, fit	foilleamaint
fóir	help, succour	fóirpint
fhearóal	attend, serve	fhearóal
fuais	saw	fuaisáil
fuaḡair (fóḡair)	announce, proclaim	{ fuaḡairt, fuaḡia
fulaing	suffer	{ fósia fulaing
ḡab	take, go	ḡabáil
ḡáir	call	ḡáirim
ḡeall	promise	ḡeallamaint
ḡeim	bellow, low	ḡeimneacht or ḡéimeacht
ḡlaob	call	ḡlaobacht
ḡluair	journey, go	ḡluaracht
ḡoil	weep	ḡol
ḡuio	pray	ḡuioe
iair	try, ask, entreat	iairpáir
impeap	contend, wrestle	impeapzáil
iméig	go away	iméacht
innir	tell	innpint
iomḡair	carry	iomḡair
iompuig	turn	iompóir
íoc	pay	íoc
íonal	wash	íonlat
ionnpuig	approach	ionnpuighe
it	eat	ite
leag	knock down	leagan
lean	follow	leanamaint
léig	let, allow	léigean
ling	leap	ling
lomair	strip, pull off	lomairt, lompaob
luig	lie (down)	luighe
mair	live, exist	{ mairneachtain
maic	forgive	{ mairtáin
meap	think	{ mairteam meap

VERB	MEANING.	VERBAL NOUN.
oil ól	nourish drink*	oileamaint ól
reic riéròtí§ rinne rit roinn	sell arrange dance run divide	reic riéròteac rinne rit roinnt
raoil reap reinn rṣar rṣuor rṣuir riubail rláo rnám rtao ruiró	think stand play (an instrument) separate destroy, erase cease walk slay swim stop sit	raoilrin reapam reinnm rṣaramaint rṣuor rṣuir riubal rláo rnám rtao ruiróe
tabair tairṣ tarraing teasairṣ teilṣ tocháir tóṣ tóiruiṣ tréiṣ tuig tuill tuirling	give offer draw teach, instruct fling wind lift search for, pursue forsaken, abandon understand earn, deserve alight, descend	tabairt tairṣrin tarraing teasairṣ teilgean tocháir tóṣáil tóṣaine tóiruiṣeac tréigean tuigrint, tuigrint {tuilleam tuilleamain tuirling

## Appendix VI.

### A LIST OF VERBS BELONGING TO FIRST CONJUGATION

bac, stop, hinder, meddle.  
bain, snatch, take.  
báit, drown.  
béic, bawl.  
bog, soften.

bliṣ, milk.  
briur, break.  
briuiṣ, bruise.  
buail, beat.  
buairó, give success.

\* Drunk, meaning intoxicated, is not ólta, but "ar meirge."

caill, lose.  
 caoin, lament.  
 cait, waste, spend, eat or cast.  
 cam, bend, make crooked.  
 can, sing.  
 caoç, blind.  
 cap, twist, turn, wind, wry.  
 ceap, think.  
 ceao, allow, leave, permit.  
 ceit, hide, conceal.  
 cinn, resolve.  
 cíom, comb.  
 claoir, defeat.  
 claoon, bend, crook.  
 coirç, stop, hinder.  
 cmaid, shake.  
 cmoç, hang.  
 cpero, believe, trust.  
 cput, tremble, quake.  
 cpiom, bend stoop, .  
 cpiom ai, set about.  
 cum, form, shape.  
 cuiu, put, send.  
 cuiu ai bun, establish.  
 cuiu caoi aiu, mend.

uoaiu, condemn, blame.  
 ueaib, ascertain, assure.  
 ueaie, look, observe, remark.  
 ueaiauo, forget.  
 uing, press, stuff, push.  
 uíol, sell.  
 uóig, burn, consume.  
 uóipt, spill, shed.  
 uuiro, shut, move.  
 uual, plait, fold.  
 uún, close

éipt, listen.

paiu, watch, guard.  
 páirç, squeeze, crush.  
 pan, stay, wait, stop.  
 páp, grow.  
 peao, whistle.  
 peall, deceive, cheat.  
 peann, flay, strip.  
 peaiu, pour out, shower.  
 peuç, behold, look.

pill, return, come back.  
 peuoaim, I can.  
 pluuç, wet, moisten, drench.  
 poill, suit, fit.  
 róiu, help, relieve, succour.  
 rógluim, learn.

çáiu, shout, call.  
 çeall, promise.  
 çeaiu, cut.  
 çéill, obey, submit.  
 çlac, take, reserve.  
 çlan, cleanse.  
 çlaao, call.  
 çluaiu, journey, travel, go.  
 çoro, steal.  
 çoil, weep, lament.  
 çoin, wound.  
 çpaiu, sign, mark.  
 çuio, pray.

iaiu, ask, seek, request, be-  
 seech.  
 foc, pay, atone.  
 it, eat

lap, light, kindle, blaze.  
 leaç, throw down.  
 lean, follow, pursue.  
 léig, read.  
 léig, grant, suffer, permit.  
 léim, leap.  
 ling, leap, bounce, start.  
 líon, fill, surfeit, cram.  
 loirç, singe, scorch, burn.  
 lúb, bend, crook.  
 luiç, lie.

maiui, last, exist, remain.  
 maiu, kill, murder.  
 maid, forgive.  
 maoç, wet, steep.  
 meall, deceive, defraud.  
 meap, estimate, think.  
 meac, fade, wither.  
 mill, spoil, destroy.  
 mol, praise.  
 múin, teach, instruct.

nearɣ, tie, join.  
nɪʒ, wash.

oɪl, nurse, cherish.  
oɪɪ, suit, fit.  
ól, drink.

ptéarɣ, crack.  
póɣ, kiss.  
poll, pierce, penetrate.  
pɪeab, spring, leap.

ɪeɪc, sell.  
ɪeub, tear, burst.  
ɪut, run, flee.  
ɪoɪnn, divide.  
ɪuɑɪɣ, pursue, rout.

ɪáɪt, thrust, stab.  
ɪɑoɪl, ɪɪl, reflect, think.  
ɪɑoɪ, deliver.  
ɪɣɑoɪl, loose, let go.  
ɪɣuɪɪ, cease, desist.  
ɪear, stand.  
ɪéro, blow.

ɪeol, teach, drive, sail.  
ɪeonn, play (music).  
ɪɣɑɪ, separate, divide.  
ɪɣɪoð, write.  
ɪɣɪuɪɪ, sweep, scrape, destroy.  
ɪɪl, drop, let fall, sink.  
ɪɪn, stretch, extend.  
ɪméro, beckon, wink.  
ɪluɪɣ, swallow.  
ɪnám, swim, float.  
ɪtɑo, stop.  
ɪtɑo ɔe, desist.  
ɪuɪð, sit.

ɪɑɪɪɣ, offer.  
ɪɑæt, choke.  
ɪeɪt, flee.  
ɪóɣ, choose, select.  
ɪóɣ, take up, lift.  
ɪɪeab, plough, till.  
ɪɪéɪɣ, forsake, abandon.  
ɪɪoɪɪ, fight, quarrel.  
ɪuɪɣ, understand.  
ɪuɪll, earn, deserve.  
ɪuɪt, fall.

## Appendix VII.

### LIST OF SYNCOPATED VERBS.

ɑɣɑɪɪ, entreat (avenge).  
ɑɪtɪn, recognize.

bɑɣɑɪɪ, threaten.

carɣɑɪɪ, slaughter.  
ceangɑɪl, bind.  
cɪɣɪl, tickle.  
coɪɣɪl, spare.  
covɑɪl, sleep.  
cɔɪɪn, defend.  
cuɪmɪl, rub.

ɔɪbɪɪ, banish.

eɪtɪl, fly.

ɪóɣɑɪn, serve.  
ɪɪeɑɣɑɪɪ, answer.  
ɪɪeɑɪɪɑɪl, attend, serve.  
(ɪ)ɔɪɣɑɪl, open.  
ɪuɑɣɑɪɪ, proclaim.  
ɪulɑɪɪɣ, suffer.  
ɪupɣɑɪl, relieve.

ɪnnɪɪ, tell.  
ɪnɣɪl, graze.  
ɪmɪɪ, play.  
ɪomɑɪɪ, carry.  
ɪoðbɑɪɪ, offer.

λαβαίη, speak.  
 λομαίη, strip, bare  
 μύρσαι, awaken.  
 ρατταίη, trample.  
 ρεααίη, avoid

τομαίη, consume, eat.  
 τοαίη, root.  
 ταρμαινῶ, draw.  
 τιονόη, gather.  
 τοαίη, wind.  
 τεινῶ, descend.

## Appendix VIII.

### ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN PRESENT-DAY USAGE.

#### Broad Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-αμαοίη (-αμουίη). {-αμ.
2. [root]	-αίῶ
3. -αὐ.	-αίῶίη, -αυαοίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -αίη.	-αμαοίῳ, -αμουίῳ.
2. -αίη.	-αὐν ῥίθ.
3. -αὐν.	-αίῳ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -αἰνν.	-αμαοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -τά.	-αὐ ῥίθ.
3. -αὐ.	-αίῶίη (-αυαοίη).

##### Past.

1. -αί.	-αμαί.
2. -αί.	-αβαί.
3. [no ending]	-αυαί.

##### Future.

1. -αὐ.	-αμαοίῳ (-αμουίῳ)
2. -αίη.	-αὐ ῥίθ.
3. -αίῶ.	-αίῳ.

##### Conditional.

1. -αἰνν	-αμαοίη (-αμουίη).
2. -τά.	-αὐ ῥίθ.
3. -αὐ	-αίῶίη (-αυαοίη).

#### Slender Terminations.

##### Imperative.

SING.	PLU.
1. —	{-ίμῖη (-εαμουίη). {-εαμ.
2. [root]	-ίῶ.
3. -εαὐ.	-ίῶίη.

##### Present Tense.

1. -ίη.	-ίμῖῳ (-ίμιῳ).
2. -ίη.	-εαὐν ῥίθ.
3. -εαὐν.	-ίῳ.

##### Imperfect.

1. -ίνν.	-ίμῖη (-ίμιη).
2. -τεά.	-εαὐ ῥίθ.
3. -εαὐ.	-ίῶίη.

##### Past.

1. -εαί.	-εαμαί.
2. -ί.	-εαβαί.
3. [no ending]	-εαυαί.

##### Future.

1. -εαὐ.	-ίμῖῳ (-ίμιῳ)
2. -ίη.	-ίῶ ῥίθ.
3. -ίῶ.	-ίῳ.

##### Conditional.

1. -ίνν.	-ίμῖη (-ίμιη).
2. -τεά.	-εαὐ ῥίθ.
3. -εαὐ.	-ίῶίη.

## Appendix IX.

## EARLY MODERN FORMS OF THE VERBS.

## 1S.

We give only those forms which have not already been given in the body of the Grammar.

**Dependent Present:** -*ḡab*; (as in *ḡurab*, *that it is*, *ḡarab*, *to which or whom it is*; *munab*, *if it is not*).

**Obsolete Dependent Present:** -*ḡō*; (as in *ḡonḡō*, *that it is*, *ḡanḡō*, *to which or whom it is*). This form occurs frequently in early modern writers. A remnant of it is found in the word *ḡiōō* or *ḡiō*, *though it is*.

**Past:** *ḡa*.

The form *ḡa* of the past though frequently found in early modern writers is now obsolete.

**Dependent Past:** -*ḡ ḡa* (sometimes written -*ḡ ḡo*), as in *ḡur ḡa*, *that it was*; *ḡar ḡa*, *to whom or which it was*; *munar ḡa*, *if it was not*; *ar ḡa*, *was it?* *nioḡ ḡa*, *it was not*.

The full form of the Dependent Past, though sometimes found in early modern writers is now contracted to -*ḡō* before vowels, and to -*ḡ* before consonants.

**Subjunctive:** *ḡāmaō* (*ḡā mbaō*), *if it were*; *ḡémaō* (*ḡé mbaō*), *though it were*.

## ṭā.

## Imperative.

1. —	<i>bīmīr</i> , <i>bīom</i> .
2. <i>bī</i> .	<i>bīō</i> , <i>bīōiō</i> .
3. <i>bīōō</i>	<i>bīōīr</i> .

## Present Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. <i>ṭāim</i>	<i>ṭāmaoiō</i> .	<i>ḡuim</i>	<i>ḡuimīō</i> .
2. <i>ṭaoi</i>	<i>ṭāṭaoi</i> .	<i>ḡule (-ir)</i>	<i>ḡuṭī</i> .
3. <i>ṭā</i>	<i>ṭāiō</i> .	<i>ḡul</i>	<i>ḡuṭiō</i> .

## Habitual Present.

1. <i>bīm</i>	<i>bīmīō</i> .
2. <i>bīm</i>	<i>bīṭī</i> .
3. <i>bī(ō)</i>	<i>bīō</i> .

## Past Tense.

ABSOLUTE.		DEPENDENT.	
1. <i>ḡāḡar</i>	<i>ḡāmar</i> .	<i>ḡabar</i>	<i>ḡabamar</i>
2. <i>ḡāḡar</i>	<i>ḡāḡar</i> .	<i>ḡabair</i>	<i>ḡababair</i> .
3. <i>bī</i>	<i>ḡāḡar</i>	<i>ḡaibō</i>	<i>ḡababair</i> .



**Future Tense.**

- |    |            |                |
|----|------------|----------------|
| 1. | bíad       | bíamais, bíam. |
| 2. | bíaim      | bíadai.        |
| 3. | bíad, bíad | bíad.          |

**Relative :** bíadp.

**Conditional—Secondary Future.**

- |    |            |          |
|----|------------|----------|
| 1. | béinn      | béimí.   |
| 2. | béiteá     | bíad rí. |
| 3. | bíad, beic | béimí.   |

**Subjunctive Mood.****Present Tense.**

- |    |        |                 |
|----|--------|-----------------|
| 1. | maðad  | maðmais, maðam. |
| 2. | maðaim | maðadai.        |
| 3. | maide  | maðad.          |

## ENDINGS OF THE REGULAR VERBS IN EARLY MODERN IRISH.

The following is a table showing the various endings of the regular verbs in Early Modern Irish. It is not intended that these forms should be learned by the student; they are given merely for *reference* :—

**Broad Terminations.****Imperative.**

- |    |        |           |
|----|--------|-----------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.      |
| 1. | —      | -am.      |
| 2. | [root] | -ad.      |
| 3. | -ad.   | -(a)adai. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |       |           |
|----|-------|-----------|
| 1. | -am.  | -(a)mais. |
| 2. | -aim. | -adai.    |
| 3. | -ad.  | -ad.      |

**Imperfect**

- |    |        |           |
|----|--------|-----------|
| 1. | -ainn. | -amais.   |
| 2. | -ad.   | -adai.    |
| 3. | -ad.   | -(a)adai. |

**Past.**

- |    |             |        |
|----|-------------|--------|
| 1. | -ap.        | -amap. |
| 2. | -aip.       | -adap. |
| 3. | (no ending) | -adap. |

**Slender Terminations.****Imperative.**

- |    |        |           |
|----|--------|-----------|
|    | SING.  | PLU.      |
| 1. | —      | -eam.     |
| 2. | [root] | -id.      |
| 3. | -eid.  | -(i)idai. |

**Present Tense.**

- |    |      |         |
|----|------|---------|
| 1. | -im. | -(i)mí. |
| 2. | -ip. | -idai.  |
| 3. | -id. | -id.    |

**Imperfect.**

- |    |       |           |
|----|-------|-----------|
| 1. | -inn. | -(i)mí.   |
| 2. | -eid. | -idai.    |
| 3. | -eid. | -(i)idai. |

**Past.**

- |    |             |         |
|----|-------------|---------|
| 1. | -ep.        | -eamap. |
| 2. | -ip.        | -eap.   |
| 3. | (no ending) | -eap.   |

**Future.**

- |    |                               |   |
|----|-------------------------------|---|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\mu$ ( $\delta\alpha\iota\upsilon$ ) |
| 2. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\mu$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                       |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\upsilon$ . | - $\rho\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                     |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                               |  |
|----|-------------------------------|--|
| 1. | - $\rho\alpha\iota\eta\eta$ . | - $\rho\alpha\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\mu$ .      |
| 2. | - $\rho\acute{\alpha}$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                  |
| 3. | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon$ .      | - $\rho\alpha\upsilon\alpha\sigma\iota\mu$ . |

**Future.**

- |    |                                  |  |
|----|----------------------------------|--|
| 1. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\upsilon$ . | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\mu$ ( $\rho\iota\mu\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | - $\rho\iota\mu$ .               | - $\rho\iota$ .  |
| 3. | - $\rho\iota\upsilon$ .          | - $\rho\iota\upsilon$ .                                    |

**Conditional.**

- |    |                                  |                            |
|----|----------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. | - $\rho\iota\eta\eta$ .          | - $\rho\iota\mu\iota\mu$ . |
| 2. | - $\rho\epsilon\acute{\alpha}$ . | - $\rho\iota$ .            |
| 3. | - $\rho\epsilon\alpha\upsilon$ . | - $\rho\iota\upsilon\mu$ . |

**Irregular Verbs.**

It is principally in the future tense that the inflexions of the irregular verbs in Early Modern Usage differ from the forms now generally used.

**Future Tense.**

- |    |                  |  |
|----|------------------|--|
| 1. | (no termination) | $\alpha\mu$ (- $\mu\alpha\sigma\iota\upsilon$ ). |
| 2. | $\alpha\iota\mu$ | $\tau\alpha\sigma\iota$ .                        |
| 3. | $\alpha$         | $\alpha\iota\upsilon$ .                          |

The following verbs took no inflexion in the 3rd person singular of the present time. The forms in brackets are the dependent forms:—

$\upsilon\omicron$ - $\beta\epsilon\iota\mu$  ( $\tau\alpha\beta\alpha\iota\mu$ ),  $\upsilon\epsilon\iota\mu$  ( $\alpha\beta\alpha\iota\mu$ ),  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\xi\epsilon\iota\upsilon$  ( $\rho\alpha\xi\alpha\iota\upsilon$ ,  $\rho\alpha\xi\upsilon\alpha\eta\eta$ ),  $\upsilon\alpha$   $\xi\eta\iota$ ,  $\upsilon\omicron$ - $\acute{\epsilon}\iota$  ( $\rho\alpha\iota\epsilon$ ), ( $\epsilon\lambda\upsilon\eta\eta$ ),  $\tau\iota\varsigma$ ,  $\tau\epsilon\iota\upsilon$ .

The following had no inflexion in the 1st person singular past tense:—

$\alpha\upsilon\upsilon\beta\alpha\mu\epsilon\tau$ , ( $\upsilon\upsilon\beta\alpha\mu\epsilon\tau$ ),  $\alpha\tau\epsilon\omicron\eta\eta\alpha\delta$  ( $\rho\alpha\epsilon\alpha$ )  $\tau\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ ,  $\epsilon\upsilon\alpha\lambda\alpha$ ,  $\mu\acute{\alpha}\eta\alpha\varsigma$ .



# INDEX.

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

- Δ, *voc. part.*, 21*d*.  
 Δ, *poss. adj.*, 522.  
 Δ, *rel.*, 26*e*, 233, &c., 546, 554.  
 Δ, *part.*, 169.  
 Δ, *prep.*, 605(2).  
 Δ*b*, 339.  
 Δ*ba*, 119.  
 Δ*bai*μ, 35*c*, 355.  
 Δ*bai*μ, 357.  
 Δ*bu*ρ, 436.  
 -Δ*c*, 467*a*.  
 Δ*c*τ ζο, 550.  
 Δ*dei*μ, 357.  
 Δ*tu*α*o*, 441.  
 Δ*tu*β*ai*ρ, 359.  
 Δ*z*, 191, 217, 617.  
 Δ*z*ά, 544.  
 Δ*z*α*o*, 86, 89.  
 Δ*z*om, 191.  
 Δ*z*uρ, 154, 628(2).  
 Δ*i*α*o*, 88.  
 Δ*z*te, 86.  
 Δ*il*ne, 10, 43*d*.  
 Δ*i*ρ*oe*, 166.  
 Δ*i*ρ*oe*α*o*, 297.  
 Δ*i*ng*al*, 65.  
 Δ*i*nn, 43(4), 104.  
 Δ*i*τ, 14, 84, 530 (*note*).  
 Δ*l*ba, 129, 473(2).  
 Δ*lu*inn, 35*b*, 144.  
 Δ*m*, 104.  
 Δ*m* (Δ*m*), *prefix*, 455.  
 Δ*m*, Δ*m*α*c*, 433.  
 Δ*m*α*c*, 433.  
 -Δ*m*α*l*, 467*c*.  
 Δ*m*ά*i*n, 172.  
 Δ*m*ά*ia*c, 434.  
 Δ*m*τ*α*c, 433.  
 Δ*mu*α*c*, 433.  
 Δ*mu*ι*z*, 433.  
 Δ*n*, *intens part.*, 161.  
 Δ*n*, *def. art.*, 39, 40, 470, &c.  
 Δ*n*, *interrog. part.*, 26*e*.  
 Δ*n*α*ll*, 438.  
 Δ*n*α*m*, 104.  
 Δ*n*-α*u*o, 198.  
 Δ*n*α*ea*ρ, 441.  
 Δ*n*α*u*, 434.  
 Δ*n*α*ρ*, 441.  
 Δ*n*ί*o*ρ, 436.  
 Δ*n*n, 39, 604, 627.  
 Δ*n*η*ra*, 166.  
 Δ*n*o*c*τ, 434.  
 Δ*n*ο*i*ρ, 441.  
 Δ*n*onn, 438.  
 Δ*n*uα*ρ*, 436.  
 Δ*oi*β*inn*, 35*b*, 144.  
 Δ*oi*β*ne*α*ρ*, 131.  
 Δ*oi*ne, 447.  
 Δ*oi*n'ne, 64.  
 Δ*oi*nnεα*c*, 64, 241.  
 Δ*oi*ρ*oe*, 166.  
 Δ*on*, *numer.*, 172, 505, 509.  
 Δ*on*, *indef. adj.*, 197, 200.  
 Δ*on*α*c*, 58.  
 Δ*on*α*ρ*, 177.  
 Δ*on*ηα*o*, 173, 504.  
 Δ*i*, *poss. adj.*, 14, 26*a*, 522.  
 Δ*i*, *pron.*, 237.  
 Δ*i*, *interrog.*, 278.  
 Δ*i*, *prep.*, 219, 578, 618.  
 Δ*i*, *verb*, 423.  
 Δ*i* β*i*τ, 197.  
 Δ*i* ρ*ea*o, 613*d*.  
 Δ*i*ρ*o*, 166.  
 Δ*i*ρ*o*ά*n*, 42*d*.  
 Δ*i*ρ*oi*ι*z*, 297, 315*d*.  
 Δ*i*ρ*ei*ρ, 434.  
 Δ*i*μ, 69.  
 Δ*i*ρ, 423.  
 Δ*i*, 225, 919.  
 Δ' *i*, 154.  
 Δ*τ*α*i*ρ, 43(3), 132.  
 Δ*τ*ά*i*μ, 390.

- ба (бó), 132.  
 ба (*verb*), 158, 334, 338, 340, 341.  
 бáтóйр, 42c, 100.  
 баile, 113.  
 бaйлiғ, 293.  
 бáн, 165.  
 бáр, 14.  
 баp, 14.  
 беac, 79.  
 беaғ, 166.  
 беaғáн, 198, 241.  
 беaлac, 58.  
 беaн, 132.  
 беap, 326.  
 беaтa, 131.  
 беiтpeap, 326.  
 беiтpí, 327.  
 бéиm, 87.  
 беиp, 342, 618(7c).  
 беиim, 347, 618(7b)  
 беиpт, 177, 481.  
 беiт, 327, 330.  
 бéiтeap, 326.  
 бéiтi, 327.  
 беiтte, 284.  
 beo, 148.  
 биaт, 64.  
 биop, 322.  
 бiтeap, 319, 322, 329.  
 битeap, 324.  
 биtí, 323.  
 блáтece, 86.  
 блáтac, 86.  
 бó, 132.  
 бóтap, 65.  
 бpaoи, 199.  
 бpac, 163.  
 бpáтaйp, 132.  
 бpеáғ, 166.  
 бpиaи, 64.  
 бpеiтeaи, 42b, 131.  
 бpиaиac, 486.  
 бpиacтap, 86, 131.  
 бpóт, 649.  
 бpиac, 56, 66.  
 бpиuiтeaи, 35a, 85.  
 бpиiғ, 31ab.  
 буacáйлi, 43(3), 105.  
 буaiт, 43(4).  
 буaiт, 261, &c  
 буaiтeap, 251.  
 буaiтoт, 289.  
 буuiтeaи, 35a, 85.  
 буиn (бó), 132.  
 буиp, 26a, 522.  
 CÁ, 26e, 278.  
 ca, 202.  
 cа, 600.  
 caбaйp, 35a.  
 cáс, 241.  
 caт, 243.  
 caт na тaтoб, 435.  
 caт cuige, 435.  
 caт pát, 435.  
 caтoé, 243.  
 caйлiн, 43e, 111.  
 caйлi, 316c.  
 caйлeac, 77.  
 cáиn, 105, 131.  
 cáиpтe, 121.  
 cáт, 316a.  
 cаи, 600.  
 caoi, 114.  
 caoиn, 315b.  
 caoиp, 66.  
 caoиa, 125.  
 capail, 37, 69.  
 cáp, 278.  
 cар, 600.  
 capиa, 121.  
 capиaйғ, 35a.  
 cařoin, 433.  
 caтaиn, 433, 435.  
 caтaйp, 35a.  
 Caтaoiп, 115.  
 caтaoiп, 126.  
 cé, 243, 435.  
 ceacтap, 242.  
 ceac, 14.  
 céac, 14, 67, 175, 511.  
 céac (*first*), 167, 505.  
 ceann, 200b, 513.  
 ceannaс, 293.  
 ceannuiғ, 293.  
 ceap, 67.  
 ceapc, 43a, 78.  
 ceapт, 64, 654.  
 ceacтaйp, 171.  
 ceacтap, 177, 481

céile, 246.  
 céim, 87.  
 ceitíne, 508.  
 ceo, 132.  
 ceoča (ceo), 132.  
 ceoṁana (ceo), 132.  
 ceol, 8, 67.  
 ceuo, 167, 505.  
 Ceuroaoín, 447.  
 ceurto, 243.  
 cia, 202, 243, 245.  
 ciac (ceo), 132.  
 cia meuo, 202.  
 cibé, 237.  
 cím, 389.  
 cinn, 513.  
 cioca, 243, 435.  
 cionnur, 435, 557.  
 cit, 104.  
 ciúmair, 88.  
 clann, 86.  
 cláir, 68.  
 cleap, 104.  
 cliaimain, 105.  
 coicéiríoir, 88.  
 cloinne, 86.  
 clor, 398.  
 cnám (cnám), 96.  
 cneap, 64, 66.  
 cnoc, 63.  
 coṁait, 35a.  
 coṁlaṁ, 10.  
 coṁaṁ, 67.  
 coigil, 302, &c.  
 coigilt, 313.  
 coileac, 59.  
 coill, 89, 131.  
 coimlíon, 32 (note).  
 coin, 119.  
 cóir, 14, 145, 654.  
 coirṁ, 316b.  
 coirte, 14.  
 córn, 154.  
 coinnuigíte, 565.  
 cóiríra, 131.  
 coinnurraín, 119.  
 conao, 435.  
 connac, 392.  
 Connaṁta, 130.  
 connaic, 392.

conneraṁ, 105.  
 conur, 435.  
 coróin, 131.  
 cor, 76.  
 corain, 315c.  
 cóta, 110.  
 cré, 132.  
 crero, 316a.  
 créiréana (cré), 132.  
 creitoreaṁ, 280.  
 creuro, 243.  
 criac (cré), 132.  
 crior, 98.  
 crioré, 114.  
 criónac, 131.  
 cuac, 131.  
 cuacṁar, 411.  
 cuair, 411.  
 cuala, 398.  
 cualaṁar, 398.  
 cuan, 67.  
 cur, 105, 198, 241, 524, &c.  
 cúis, 508.  
 cúigeair, 177, 481.  
 'cuile, 242.  
 cúinne, 113.  
 cuir, 316b.  
 cuirim, 618(8).  
 cúir, 87.  
 cuirle, 124.  
 cum, 223, 620.  
 cun, 603.

Dá, *numeral*, 514, &c.  
 dá (do + a), 544.  
 dá, *conj.*, 26e, 552.  
 -da, 467d.  
 daṁac, 86.  
 daibce, 86.  
 daille, 43d.  
 dála, 603.  
 dálta, 603.  
 daoi, 114.  
 daoine, 114.  
 dar, 424.  
 dár, 278.  
 darra, 508.  
 darb, 542.  
 Darraoín, 447.  
 dáiréas, 177, 481.

- ναῖ, 104.  
 Νέ (Νία), 132.  
 νε, 163, 227, 606(1), 621.  
 νεακαίη, 145.  
 νεαῖα, 411.  
 νεαῖ, 493, 494(2).  
 νεαῖα, 411.  
 νέαν, 316e.  
 νεαῖα, 132.  
 νεαῖα, 132.  
 νεαῖα, 132.  
 νεαῖα, 387.  
 νεαῖα, 279, 381.  
 νεαῖ, 507.  
 νεαῖ, 87.  
 νεαῖ, 381.  
 νεαῖα, 177.  
 νεαῖα, 357.  
 νεαῖα, 442.  
 νεαῖ, 86.  
 νεαῖ, 66, 200.  
 νεαῖ, 377.  
 Νία (God), 132.  
 νία (day), 448.  
 νια, 177, 481.  
 νιαῖα, 314.  
 νιαῖ, 315a.  
 νιαῖ, 86.  
 νιαῖ, 141.  
 νιαῖ, 139.  
 νιαῖ, 114.  
 νό, numeral, 14, 171.  
 νο, poss. adj., 182, 521.  
 νο, prefix, 287, 455.  
 νο, before past tense, 276.  
 νο, prep. 188, 220, 606(1), 622  
 νόα, 427.  
 νόα, 427.  
 νόα, 336.  
 νόα, 315b.  
 νοαῖα, 199a.  
 νοαῖ, 415.  
 νοαῖα, 447.  
 νοαῖα, 199a.  
 νοαῖ, 65.  
 νόα, 198.  
 νοαῖ, 114.  
 νοαῖ, 493, 494(2).  
 νοαῖ, 43(4), 101.  
 νοαῖ, 419.  
 νοαῖ, 87.  
 νοαῖ, 359.  
 νοαῖ, 359.  
 νοαῖ, 114.  
 νοαῖ, 415.  
 νοαῖ, 415.  
 νόα, 67, 315a.  
 έ, 211, 535.  
 εαῖ, 70.  
 εαῖα, 70.  
 εαῖ, 213.  
 εαῖα, 462.  
 εαῖ, 646.  
 εαῖα, 462.  
 εαῖ, 649.  
 εαῖ, 61.  
 εαῖα, 70.  
 εαῖ, 114.  
 εαῖ, 65.  
 εαῖ(τ), 197.  
 εαῖ, 197.  
 εαῖ, 32, note.  
 εαῖ, 64, 241.  
 εαῖ, 127, 473(2).  
 εαῖ, 238.  
 εαῖ, 131.  
 εαῖ, 58.  
 εαῖ, 61.  
 ρά, 190, 228, 623.  
 ραῖ, 279, 392.  
 ραῖ, 376.  
 ραῖ, 370.  
 ραῖ, 392.  
 ραῖ, 603.  
 ραῖ, 166.  
 ραῖ, 316f.  
 ραῖ, 316f, 368.  
 ραῖ, 280.  
 ραῖ, 388.  
 ραῖ, 371.  
 ραῖ, 14, 316a.  
 ραῖ, 190, 228, 623.  
 ραῖ, 290, 316a.  
 ραῖ, 387.  
 ραῖ, 392.  
 ραῖ, 316f.  
 ραῖ, 428.  
 ραῖ, 428.



ρεαυαη, 425.  
 ρεαυαμαη, 425.  
 ρεαη, 62, 69.  
 ρέαη, 14, 62.  
 ρεαηαηαη, 147  
 ρεαηη, 11, 166.  
 ρεic, 386.  
 ρείc, 66.  
 ρεicεαηη, 131.  
 ρεicρeαηα, 396.  
 ρείξ, 66.  
 ρέile, 106.  
 ρέin, 206.  
 ρειρ, 87.  
 ρειρcιηc, 396.  
 ρειc, 316a.  
 ρeoiL, 99.  
 ρiaC, 66.  
 ρice, 175, 511.  
 ρiceαυ, 168.  
 ρion, 14, 97.  
 ρíoi, 161.  
 ρipín, 32 (note).  
 ρiú, 433, 642.  
 ρiaiceαηαη, 35b.  
 ρocal, 66.  
 ρoclóηη, 43(4).  
 ρóηη, 259.  
 ρóηηcιη, 259.  
 ρoγup, 166.  
 ρoigpe, 166.  
 ρór, 14.  
 ρneum, 83.  
 ρηiξ, 132.  
 ρηiξoc, 132.  
 ρηic. 272.  
 ρuaC, 94.  
 ρuaγaη, 301.  
 ρuaγua, 313.  
 ρuaim, 87, 90.  
 ρuαιη, 279.  
 ρuaηcαη, 372.  
 ρuic, 166.  
 ρuicαeαη, 321.  
 ρuláηη, 644.  
 ρupup, 166.  
 ρupa, 166.

ζα, 132.  
 ζά, 544.

ζαb, 316f, 364.  
 ζαba, 122.  
 ζαbázil, 290.  
 ζαbφαυ, 367.  
 ζαc, 201.  
 ζαc αon, 242.  
 ζαc ηe, 201.  
 ζαc uile, 241.  
 ζαeice (ζα). 132.  
 ζan, 580, 606(2), 624.  
 ζaη, 166.  
 ζeαpóro, 115.  
 ζé, 132.  
 ζeal, 132.  
 ζéanna, 132.  
 ζeαηη, 141, 166.  
 ζeibim, 370.  
 ζeic, 43(4).  
 ζeobαυ, 365.  
 ζeobαυ, 373.  
 ζeuz, 80.  
 ζibé, 235.  
 ζiúeαc, 452.  
 ζile, 106.  
 ζioηua, 166.  
 ζiaη, 165.  
 ζilé, 161.  
 ζluαιη, 87.  
 ζnim, 379.  
 ζníom, 105.  
 ζníoi, 379.  
 ζnó, 10, 114.  
 ζo, *conj.*, 26e, 235, 549.  
 ζo, *prep.*, 39, 625.  
 ζo ceann, 613d.  
 ζo vé maη, 435.  
 ζoin, 315b.  
 ζpánua, ζpáinuo, 10, 166.  
 ζpainín, 199.  
 ζpeim, 43(4), 102, 200.  
 ζpian, 81.  
 ζuil, 316b.  
 ζup, 278.  
 ζuc, 104.

ι, 39, 186, 226, 604, 621  
 i, *pron.*, 211.  
 i, *noun.* ια, 132.  
 ιaη, *prep.*, 579.  
 ιaη, 440.

ιαρταρ, 442.  
 ιοιρ, 229, 602(1), 628.  
 ιμβάμας, 434.  
 ιμεαρτα, 314.  
 ιν, *pronoun*, 238.  
 ιν, *prep.*, 39, 535, 627.  
 ιν (ιον) *prefix*, 286.  
 ινωέ, 434.  
 ιν-φειρρεανα, 396.  
 ινωιδιό, 449.  
 ιννιρ, 35c.  
 ιομασ, 198.  
 ιομαρκα, 198.  
 ιομόα, 166, 493.  
 ιομτούρα, 603.  
 ιονά, 156.  
 ιον-μόλτα, 285.  
 ιονήμιν, 166.  
 ιοννιρ, 452.  
 ιορσ, 417.  
 ιρ, *conj.*, 170.  
 ιρ, *verb*, 156, 333, 584.  
 ίριολ, 141.  
 ιρτεαδ, 433, 436.  
 ιρτιζ, 433, 436.  
 ιτε, 416.  
 ιύο, *pronoun*, 238.

λά, 132.  
 λαβαιρ, 35c, 315c.  
 λαα, 123.  
 λαετε (λά), 132.  
 λαετσαντα (λά) 132.  
 λαίζιν, 130.  
 λαίρτιζ, 438.  
 λαίρτεαρ, 441.  
 λαίρτιαρ, 441.  
 λαίττε, 86.  
 λάν, 198.  
 λαοόμασ, 70.  
 λαραιρ, 35a.  
 λαρταλλ, 438.  
 λαρτοιρ, 441.  
 λαρτουαίό, 441.  
 λαταδ, 86.  
 λε, 39, 154, 187, 221, 613d, 629.  
 λεαβαό, 105.  
 λεαβαρ, 18, 69.  
 λεαc, 88.  
 λεαζ, 316d.

λεαν. 316c.  
 λεανb, 9, 64.  
 λεανανήνα, 290.  
 λεαpa, 105.  
 λεαρ, 421.  
 λεαρμυιζ, 438.  
 λέιζ, 316d.  
 λέιζ, 315a.  
 λέιμ, 87.  
 λέιμε, 113.  
 λερ, 278.  
 λερb, 542.  
 λια, 166.  
 λιl, 75.  
 λίον, 67.  
 λιτιρ, 88.  
 λό (λά), 132.  
 loc, 15.  
 long, 10, 82.  
 луан, 447.  
 luc, 87.  
 lucr, 115.  
 луза, 160, 166.  
 luiб, 87.

μά, 21g.  
 mac, 64, 69, 487, etc.  
 macμασ, 70.  
 μασασ, 65.  
 μαισοιν, 35a.  
 μαισοm, 104.  
 μάιλιν, 32 (note).  
 μάιρτ, 447.  
 μαίρεαs, 452.  
 μαίτ, 143, 166.  
 μαίτεαρ, 42d.  
 μάλα, 14, 110.  
 μάλλαcт, 94.  
 маор, 55.  
 map, 21g, 453, 557.  
 -mаp, 467b.  
 μαρκαс, 57.  
 μαρкуиζεаcт, 565.  
 μαρзаs, 9, 65.  
 μάταρ, 132.  
 meacan, 66.  
 μέαp, 14.  
 меара, 166.  
 mí, 132.  
 míle, 113, 175, 176, 511.

mílir, 144.  
 mill, 315a.  
 minic, 166.  
 míniġ, 315a.  
 mionca, 166.  
 mionna (mí), 132.  
 míora (mí), 132.  
 míroċ, 163.  
 míre, 205.  
 mná, 132.  
 mo, 179, 521.  
 mó, 166.  
 móroċ, 163.  
 móin, 103, 131.  
 mol, 315a.  
 molaċ, 289.  
 molta, 284.  
 móh, 137, 166.  
 móhán, 198.  
 móh-ġeġrear, 177.  
 muċa, 433.  
 muir, 270.  
 múille, 113.  
 muirir, 115.  
 mullaċ, 58.  
 muna, 26e, 550.  
 munar, 278.  
 múr, 67.

na, 14, 40f.  
 ná, 14, 156.  
 ná 50, 452.  
 naċ, *conj.*, 26e.  
 naċ, *rel. pron.*, 235.  
 naċar, 278(6).  
 náma, 119.  
 naoi, 507.  
 naonbar, 177.  
 nár, 278(6). 549.  
 -ne, 184.  
 neaċ, 64.  
 neam-, *prefix*, 455.  
 neart, 64, 198, 650.  
 neara, 166.  
 neim-, 455.  
 neim-ġeanaimlaċ, 462.  
 neul, 67.  
 ní, 21g.  
 ní, *noun.*, 487, &c.  
 nic, 487. &c.

níò, 114, 157, 158.  
 níor, 278.  
 níor, 157, 158.  
 noċ, 234.  
 nó 50, 550.  
 nuad, 494(2).  
 nuair, 557.

O, *pronoun*, 238.  
 ó, *noun*, 32, 487, &c.  
 ó, *prep.*, 189, 222.  
 obair, 35a, 88.  
 oċt, 507.  
 ó òear, 411.  
 oirċe, 434.  
 oileán, 62.  
 oirgeo, 198.  
 oirġear, 442.  
 ól, 316a.  
 olann, 35a.  
 olc, 166.  
 óráio, 88.  
 órta, 148.  
 órtaċ, 58.  
 ór, 632.  
 orġail, 298 (note).  
 ó tuair, 441.

páorais, 115.  
 páoir, 88.  
 páirc, 87.  
 páorac, 486.  
 pé i b9.  
 peann, 66.  
 peart, 120.  
 piġinn, 35a.  
 piġinn, 35a, 199.

Raċtar, 329.  
 raċtar, 325.  
 raġao, 412.  
 ránaġ, 420.  
 ránaġar, 420.  
 raib, 279, 325.  
 ráirċe, 363.  
 reammar, 141.  
 réim, 87.  
 reub, 259.  
 rí, 132.  
 riáctain, 421.

րաճեանք, 421.

րան, 64.

րնջւմ, 420.

րնջե, 132.

րոննե, 381.

րոջ, 161.

րոջա, 132.

րտ, 290, 316a.

րօ, 279.

րօ, 161.

րօճեան, 421.

րօմ, 224, 633

րօմիք, 224.

րօմոս, 199.

րոջ, 279.

Տա(ս)րան, 130, 473(2).

տաճիք, 35b.

տաճ, 198.

տան, 238.

տալ, 438.

տան, 238.

տաք, 161.

Տաճար, 447.

տաօ, 114.

թե, *pronoun*, 210.

թե, *numeral*, 508.

-թե, 184.

թաճ, 507.

թաճար, 177, 481.

թամրոջ, 152.

-թան, 184.

թան, 494(2).

թան, 14.

թար, 316a.

թարթան, 205.

թարթար, 177, 481.

թօ, 195, 238.

թօօ, 66.

թօլ, 67.

թաօլ, 315b.

թար, 316c.

թաճալ, 66, 67.

թաճան, 86.

թաւալաւ, 42c.

թան, 86.

թաճ, 131.

թան, 86.

թալ, 87.

թանթաւ, 280

թաւ, 316b.

թ, 210.

թա, 166.

թար, 441.

թաճ, թաճ, 239.

թն, *adj.*, 14, 195

թն, *pronoun*, 238

թն, 14.

թնե, թնե, 239.

թօր, 436.

թաւալ, 35c, 290.

թաւ, 238.

թաւ, 132.

թաւաւ, 65.

թան, 66.

թաւ, 88

թաւ, 132.

թաւ, 131.

թաւոն, 113.

թաւ, 68.

թաւան, 315b.

թաւ, 66.

թան, 316a.

թօ, *adj.*, 195.

թօ, *pron.*, 238

թօ, *prefix*, 236, 455

թաւ, 145.

թոն, 195.

թոն, 441.

թաւ, 89.

թան, 87.

թան, 64.

թաւան, 420.

թաւան, 420.

թան, 131.

թաւ, 104.

թաւ, 436.

թաւ, 238.

թաւ, 49(1), 90.

թաւ, 14, 551, 558

թաւ, 14, 49(1), 90

թաւալ, 346.

թաւան, 400.

թան, 318.

թան, 103.

թան, 279, 393

թաւան, 131,

թաւ, 438.

թան, 402.

ἐάνταρ, 403.  
 ταρ, *verb*, 399.  
 ταρ, *prep.*, 230, 634.  
 τάρη, 426.  
 τάταρ, 320.  
 τε, 148, 166.  
 τέ, 237.  
 τεαδ, 132.  
 τεαδτ, 406.  
 τεαδαίμ, 400.  
 τεαμάιμ, 128.  
 τεαρ, 440, 441.  
 τέιζ, 408.  
 τειλζ, 316*d*.  
 τεινε, 113, 131.  
 τέιμιζ, 409.  
 τεο, 148, 166.  
 τιαρ, 440, 441.  
 τιοδατ, 406.  
 τιζ, 132.  
 τιζεαρηα, 112.  
 τίμ, 390.  
 τιμδαίλ, 603.  
 τινnear, 649.  
 τίσοδατ, 406.  
 τίμ, 89.  
 τιμim, 166.  
 τιοημα, 166.  
 έίор, 436.  
 тиоηма, 351.  
 тобай, 68.  
 тоил, 92.  
 тоиη, 440, 441.  
 тоиγ, 603.  
 тнеηα, 603.

тне, 39, 231, 604, 625.  
 тнеар, 505.  
 тнеарηα, 603.  
 тнеиρε, 166.  
 тнеίγ, 316*d*.  
 тнеun, 166.  
 тнуіη, 177, 481.  
 тноиγ, 76 (note).  
 тном, 162 462.  
 тнуаиіл, 88.  
 тү, 531.  
 туаіо, 440, 441.  
 туаиρεаηт, 442.  
 туар, 436.  
 туγ, 279.  
 түиη, 89.  
 түиγге, 166.  
 туиііеао, 198.  
 туγα, 205.

ua, 132.  
 uaiη, 87.  
 ualaδ, 58.  
 uapaλ, 35*b*, 141.  
 uδ, 88.  
 uδaλλ, 66.  
 úo, 196.  
 uí, 132, 489.  
 uile, 197, 201.  
 uingε, 114.  
 ulaió, 130.  
 um, 232, 636.  
 úη, 161.  
 uηup, 166.  
 uγα, 166.

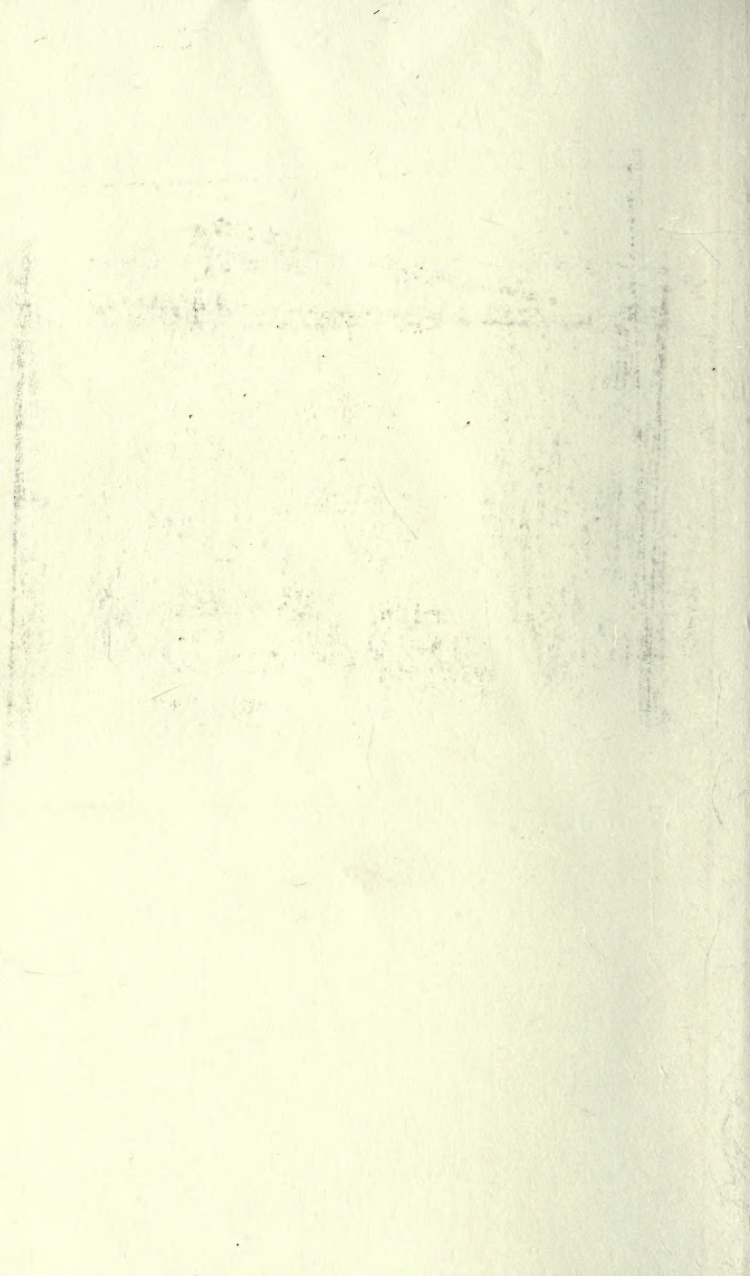
6071 #3











PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---

PB  
1223  
B7

Brothers of the Christian  
schools  
Graimear na Gaedhilge



